



CC  
# 15, 872











A  
NATURAL HISTORY  
OF  
NEVIS,

And the rest of the  
*English Leeward Charibee Islands*

IN  
AMERICA.

With many other Observations on  
NATURE and ART;

Particularly, An Introduction to  
**The Art of Decyphering.**

IN  
Eleven Letters from the Rev<sup>d</sup> Mr. SMITH,  
sometime Rector of St. *John's* at NEVIS, and  
now Rector of St. *Mary's* in BEDFORD; to the  
Rev<sup>d</sup> Mr. MASON, B. D. *Woodwardian*  
Professour, and Fellow of *Trinity-College*, in  
*Cambridge*.

---

CAMBRIDGE:

Printed by J. BENTHAM, Printer to the UNIVERSITY;  
and sold by W. THURLBOURN in *Cambridge*; S. BIRT  
in *Ave-Maria-Lane*, C. BATHURST in *Fleet-Street*, and  
J. BEECROFT in *Lombard-Street*, LONDON.

MDCCXLV.



TO THE  
WORTHY GENTLEMEN

OF

*N E V I S,*

MOTHER of the

*English* Leeward *Charibee* Islands  
in *America*.

SIRS,

**I** Often reflect with singular Pleasure,  
upon the five happy Years that I  
was Rector of St. *John's* Parish in your  
Country, and do with the utmost Grati-  
tude acknowledge the Favours I receiv-  
ed from You all.

I then kept a Book of Remarks upon  
what I saw most observable in your  
Climate, and collected many beautiful  
Sea-Shells, which about nine years after

## DEDICATION.

my return to *England* I presented to Dr. *Woodward's* Repository of Fossils at *Cambridge*. Mr. *Mason*, the *Woodwardian* Professor desiring me to give him some account of them, occasioned my writing the first Letter; And as I composed the others at leisure hours afterwards, I did not think myself necessitated to put any Dates to them: Besides, I had no thoughts of printing them till of late.

The principal Subject relates pretty much to your Island: But as my Book of Remarks might not be free from Errors; and as in divers Articles I was forced to trust solely to memory at the time of writing them; I shall own myself farther indebted to Your generous Temper, if any of you will rectify those Errors; as well as point out such curious things as may have escaped my memory or notice; and indeed I lay hold of this  
oppor-

## DEDICATION.

opportunity to request the same of all others who discover faults in them.

I received the highest Civilities too at *St. Christopher's, Antigua, and Montserrat*, whose hospitable Inhabitants I also pleasingly remember, by frequent instancing of their Concurrence with You in a true taste of Humanity and Honour.

Worthy Gentlemen! That the Rain and the Dew, with other choice temporal as well as spiritual Blessings of Heaven, may abundantly descend upon the *English Leeward Charribee Islands*, is the hearty Prayer of

*Your most humble, and*

*highly obliged Servant,*

William Smith.





# LETTERS

To the Rev<sup>d</sup>. Mr. CHARLES MASON,  
Woodwardian Professor in the University of  
Cambridge, and Fellow of Trinity College.

---

## LETTER I.

SIR,

**H**AD I been informed either of your Person or Courtesy before the other day; you might sooner have heard from me; or had I (when at *Nevis*) imagined my Shells would ever have been lodged in so honourable a Place, the Collection should have been larger, if not more curious: However, I cannot help giving you the trouble of reading my present Thoughts upon them; which though not methodical, or perhaps free from Mistakes in some respects, yet as I have committed no wilful Mistake, a Gentleman of your known Candour will easily pardon and pass such over.

2. These Shells are found upon that part of the Coast of *Nevis* where the Sea is most subject to Rocks on the Western side, and with good reason, *viz.* because the smooth sandy Bays are daily visited by our Fishermen's long Net called a Seine; or rather because there is a greater quantity

tity of Moss, Weeds, and other Nourishment, to support them among the less disturbed Rocks: They have no Names with us there; for we seldom or never eat of them, unless it be a large particular sort of Wilk, whose Shells are finely polished, and made into Snuff-boxes (very commonly) at *London*<sup>a</sup>; and except also the Cockle which we use by way of Sauce to Rock-fish, Welshmen, Old Wives, Cavallies, &c. Their meat for Colour, Shape, and Taste resembles our English ones, but they are delicious at full of the Moon, increasing and decreasing in bulk as well as goodness, just as that Heavenly Body seems to increase or decrease to our sight: You have at least a dozen of the Shells (no ways shaped like our English Cockles) that are small and of a triangular Form, but not equilaterally so, two Sides of them being each of them full as long again as the short Side; all the three Angles are rounded off or blunted; they are of a white shining Colour like well polished white Marble, and generally speaking streaked downwards very regularly with beautiful Red or Blue Veins. They are taken in the following manner, *viz.* A Negro Man goes in at one of our sandy Bays up to his knees, where stooping down he fills a Basket with Sand from the bottom, which

<sup>a</sup> *Note,* That a Wilk Fish both looks and eats exactly like our English Perriwinkle.

Basket he dips so often in the Water, as till the Sand being washed clean away leaves the Cockles behind: And it is worth our observation, That this sort of Cockle is not to be found, as far as I could hear of, at any other of the Leeward *Caribee* Islands; nay, that they have been carried down to Saint *Christopher's*, but would not propagate there, though the furthest part of that Island is no more than thirty Miles off, and the nearest end within four or five Miles of *Nevis*. *Antigua* has an incomparable kind of Sea Fish (whose name I do not remember) that is peculiar to its self; for it is not found at any other of our Islands. We have a good Spring and short Stream in our white Ground at *Nevis*, which yield us Mud Fishes, that are reckoned the richest Fish we have: But I always thought the Cavally (a Sea Fish) the finest eating of any; it is a deep bodied Fish, weighs four or five pounds, and tastes not unlike an English Maccarel; it is a very firm Fish.

3. *Nevis* produces a Tree called Dog-wood; and when seven or eight Gentlemen have an inclination to divert themselves with fishing (or more properly speaking with Fish-hunting,) they send each of them a Negro Slave to the Woods, in order to fetch some of the Bark which grows upon its Roots: this Bark is next morning pounded very small with Stones, put into old Sacks,

carried into the rocky part of the Seas, steeped till thoroughly soaked with the Salt Water, and then well squeezed by our Negroes to get out the Juice: This Juice immediately colours the Sea, and stains it with a reddish hue; and being of a poisonous nature, will in an hour's time (that is to say about eleven a clock in the forenoon, ten being the usual time of beginning of this diversion) make the Fishes such as Groopers, Rock-fish, Old Wives, Welchmen, &c. so drunk or intoxicated, as to swim on the Surface of the Water quite heedless of the danger: the Gentlemen then send in their Negroes who pursue (both swimming and diving) the poor Fishes, till they catch them with their hands; they themselves standing by on high Rocks to see the Pastime.<sup>b</sup>

4. The Poison kills millions of the small Fry; and indeed I can assign no reason why they should not likewise destroy the Shell-fishes who lie at the bottom, and of course are less qualified to escape its effects by passing into the adjacent purer Water; besides, they must naturally die in considerable numbers every year; so that in short, it is no wonder at all, if in our Hurricane Months, viz. *July, August and September*, their Shells are cast up in considerable quantities on the rocky Shore.

<sup>b</sup> Note, That *Herman Moll's British Empire in America*, describes several strange Fishes peculiar to these Seas, that I never could see or hear of.

5. That they are so cast up is certain; but then let me tell you, that their Colours are no ways bright and beautiful, till they have lain upon the Sea-shore for some time, to dry and polish by the Sun's hot Rays that will soon scorch off such Moss or Soil as may stick about them for a while at first, and hinder the eye from perceiving those exquisite (inimitable) strokes of Nature's finest Pencil with which they are all over adorned.

6. The little round Holes that seem as it were artfully drilled thorough many of them, I take to be done by either a particular sort of Fish called by Dr. *Woodward* *Purpura*, or else by Sea-worms (the Shells of some of which I sent you,) as soon as the Fishes in them were dead, when the Shells were undoubtedly much softer than they now are, and of course far easier penetrated: The Scarlet Spots that are so lively upon two or three of them, I suppose to be a sort of Minium or red glutinous Earth which they contracted in the Sea, and which by length of time hardened into much the same matter with the Shells: these are not the Barnacle sort of Sea-worms.

7. You will find in my Collection at least a dozen Shells that are brown on the outside and of a palish green on the inside, called *Patellæ*: they rise gradually from an oval base in shape of a Pyramid, having generally speaking a little

oblong hole at the top. In the *West Indies* they are usually named Nipple Shells, on account of their being a sovereign Remedy for the sore Nipple of a lying-in Woman's Breast, being applied thereto. You say, that they are helpful to the Nipple only by protecting it from external Injury, which its figure is proper for; but I see no reason why they should not likewise have a healing Vertue, as the good experienced Ladies there assert; for they are full of Salts: No body I believe ever saw a Fish in them, so that, *Quære*, How they are formed. Now whether this healing vertue or quality yet remains in them, I vastly question; because of the alteration of Climate and length of time since they were gathered from off the Sea-shore, *Nevis* lying in the sixteenth degree of Northern Latitude, and the Shells being gathered in the year of our Lord 1720. This I know from my own observation, that the *Cortex Peruv.* never fails of curing any Intermitting Fever (or even a Remitting one, as the Doctors term the lowest abatement of that Distemper) at *Nevis*, which is situate in a hot Climate; whereas it frequently misses of that happy effect in plain Intermissions of an Ague here in *England*, a very cold Climate: From whence I would conclude its Vertue to be strongest, in Countries of much the same Latitude with *Peru*; or at least, that Human Bodies there are more easily worked upon

upon by reason of the great Heat which opens the Pores, &c. And indeed were I a Physician, I might perhaps insist on the self same Qualities in regard to all other kinds of Medicines, with reason enough on my side.

8. You have there also five or six Shells that are round and milk white as well as of a brittle substance, in Shape and Size not unlike a *Nonpareil* Apple, or rather resembling a large Mushroom before it is fully opened at the bottom; and it is all over set out to the best advantage, with little round Risings that seem (if I may be allowed the expression) formed by Nature in the most exact and artful symmetry, and distance, from each other; being in such due proportions and numbers, as to make them rise gradually from bottom to top, I mean allowing for their decreasing both in number and bulk as they come towards the centre in the top. When this Shell is first taken out of the water, each one of these little round Risings is armed with just such a sharp pointed Dart as we see issuing out of our common Hedge-hogs, both as to colour and length. At *Nevis* we call them Sea Eggs; but very improperly I think, for they are certainly alive, and do nimbly move those sharp-pointed Darts, in order to prick the Feet of such Negroes as dive to take them up. When they die in the Sea either naturally or else by

Poison, their Shells loose those Darts, and as soon as a Storm comes they are thrown up on the Shore, where the violent Heat of the Sun bleaches the whole Shell, till it becomes as white as you now have them. Whilst they are alive, they have a soft, black, and round substance, not unlike the Nipple of a Woman's Breast, which they can raise out of the largest hole on the flattest or bottom side, and a much lesser round substance of the same nature appears out of the much lesser hole on the other flat side or rather top of the Shell: I imagine the bottom round substance to be its Head that feeds or grazes on Weeds, &c. which lye or grow at the bottom of the Sea; but then I am entirely at a loss what to determine about the lesser round substance, unless I durst venture boldly to pronounce that another Head: In short it is all a meer Conjecture. If you examine the Inside of it, you will perceive a prodigious number of little Holes that you may stick a small minikin Pin into, running in due distances in proportion to their number quite thorough the Shell, in Lines that are exactly parallel, from the bottom part quite up to the center in the top of this Shell, and thorough which the Salt Water did I suppose enter in order to scour and keep the Fish in health. The Fish is both in colour and form just like Salmon or indeed any other Fishes  
of



Spawn, and pretty firmly fixed close in all the smooth Partitions between those parallel Lines of Holes. We break the Shells till we have got as much of the Fish as will fill two or three of the largest, which are each as big as my two Fists: Then we season it pretty highly, as we do Turtle or Tortoise, and set them with their sharp pointed Darts on (as they came out of the Sea,) over a gentle Wood-coal Fire, half burnt to ashes, where it stands till it is sufficiently stewed: But in my opinion, it eats far too lushiously. I saw several of their broken Shells upon the Coast of *Lincolnshire*; and have been informed, that the Fishermen at *Lynn* in *Norfolk*, and on most of our *English* Coasts, do frequently take them up in their Dragging Nets. I had almost forgot to mention the Variety of Cockle-Shells I sent, that resemble our *English* ones in Shape, though infinitely surpassing them in beautiful Colours, and some of which are on the outside far rougher than a Nutmeg-grater, but shine like the best polished Marble: We do not eat them; and to speak truth, I never saw one of them alive. You have there too a Fish's Shell called a Moon: It is round and as broad as my hand, the middle being as thick as two Crown Pieces, and falling down with a gentle Slope quite to the Edges where it is no thicker than Half a Crown: From the Center in the top  
you

you see four or five sets of Rows that are exceeding fine and narrow Cavities, thorough which the Water descends into the Body of the Shell where the Fish resides: These Cavities project out from near the Center an Inch or better towards the Edges in the form of Peach-tree Leaves: There is a round hole in the Center on the under side that goes up into the Body of the Shell. As I never found any more of the sort, so I thought it a pity to break that in pieces purely to examine the inside.

9. In the Month of *July*, 1719, one Mr. *Moses Pinbeiro* a Jew and myself, went to angle in Black Rock Pond, which is situate a quarter of a mile or better Northwards from *Charles Town* our Metropolis or Capital, and about thirty yards distant from the Sea. Mr. *Pinbeiro's* Hook caught hold on something at the bottom of the Pond, and he ordered my Negro Man *Oxford* to strip, dive, and unloose it. *Oxford* went indeed to the bottom, but came again without effecting it; and said, that it was entangled in a small Bush that grew in the bottom of the Pond, which was in that place about two yards and a half deep. However, he dived again, and after a few sturdy pulls, brought up the Bush, Roots and all. Both its Roots and Branches were visibly enough alive, but without either Bark or Leaves, it being covered over with a soft blackish substance

stance which no doubt served in the room of Bark. Upon cutting it in two, I found the Wood of a pale or faded green.

10. I hereupon began to reflect seriously with myself, and concluded, that the vast *Atlantick* Ocean (which looks of the finest Azure Blue colour occasioned by the great depth and exceeding transparency of Water) might abound at bottom with large growing Trees, and smaller Bushes, as well as with Weeds, or Grass: And what renders the point not so chimerical as highly probable is, That the Shore about half a mile to the Southward of *Charles* Fort, is plentifully stocked with dead dry Bushes, which the Sea in Hurricanes and stormy Weather throws up: The Roots of those Bushes, (two of which, together with my Shells, I presented your University) are so firmly fixed in a very hard and solid Stone, that they are all of a piece: To be plain, they must grow in the Sea, because the Land Soil of that Country produces none such, that I can remember at least.

11. And here perhaps a fruitful Fancy would easily discover Mountains and Hills, Vallies and Plains, Woods and Copices, thorough which the numberless Inhabitants of the great Deep were winding their way (either separate or in whole flocks, just as their occasions led them,) either for Food or Pastime; as also, That the Vallies  
and

and Plains, Woods, and Coppices are wondrous fertile, whereas the Summits of Mountains and Hills are generally speaking barren enough; and this last Article, I would willingly assign for the true Reason, why nothing bigger than small Bushes are cast ashore to the Southward of *Charles Fort* (as mentioned in the foregoing paragraph) in Storms and Hurricanes, whose raging Billows want sufficient force or violence to disturb the lower recesses of the Abyfs of the Ocean. If it be objected, That *Natura nil agit frustra*; and of course, what use can they be of? The self same fruitful Fancy will as readily make answer, That the Bark, &c. on such considerable and lofty Trees, may serve the greater Leviathans of the Ocean by way of Food; and moreover, That such tall Woods as well as the shorter Coppices and Shrubs may stop the too violent pursuit of the more ravenous sort of them after the smaller Fry, who without such places of retreat would be swallowed up in whole Shoals. Besides Providence may appoint other uses of them which are unknown to us.

12. I had like to have forgot to acquaint you, That the Bush in which Mr. *Pinheiro's* Line was entangled, grew out of a softish Rock (a piece of which about the bigness of my Fist I sent with my Shells) that is heavy, white, porous, and when  
by

by any accident loosened from the bottom, does naturally swim.

13. Consulting my last Volume of Remarks, I found in them the following Passage, which I had with singular pleasure transcribed verbatim out of the Saint *James's Evening Post* for September 25, 1729, viz. “ Some days ago Captain  
 “ *Hannibal*, in the Sloop *Cornelius*, brought over  
 “ as Passengers from *Roterdam*, the two famous  
 “ *English* Divers living at *Weymouth*, having been  
 “ three Years in the *Dutch East India* Compa-  
 “ ny’s Service, and had been sent to fish upon the  
 “ Wrecks of some Ships of theirs in *India*: They  
 “ gave a specimen of their Skill before the  
 “ Governour and Directors at *Middleburgh* in  
 “ *Zealand*, by diving in six Fathom Water, and  
 “ staying at the bottom three quarters of an  
 “ hour, bringing up some Gravel in their hands :  
 “ The Directors afterward entered into a Con-  
 “ tract with them, agreeing to give six Pounds  
 “ *per Cent.* for the Treasure they should recover,  
 “ and so for other Goods in proportion to their  
 “ Value. The first trial they made was upon  
 “ the Wreck of a *Dutch East India* Ship that  
 “ had been lost off *Cape Coast* in six Fathom  
 “ Sea, in which they succeeded so well, that  
 “ they brought up at several times 3600*l.* in  
 “ Silver. They dived also upon another Wreck  
 “ in eight Fathoms, and brought up some Bars  
 “ of

“ of Silver and Gold, and several Brafs Great  
“ Guns: When one went to the bottom, his  
“ Companion staid on board to pull him up as  
“ occasion offered; for they would trust no  
“ Foreigner. Their diving Engine they contriv-  
“ ed in *England*, which was made of Wood, six  
“ hundred weight of Lead being affixed to the  
“ bottom to sink it, and less would not do;  
“ The Glassess before their Eyes were three  
“ Inches thick, and their Hands were at li-  
“ berty to grope and fasten Hooks to Chests  
“ and such other things as they had a mind  
“ to get up. Notwithstanding the largeness of  
“ the Engine, which terrified most of the In-  
“ habitants of the Deep, there was one large  
“ Fish that would often make at them; but  
“ to guard against him, they carried in one  
“ hand a little sharp Lance, with which they  
“ pricked him, then he scoured off. They ne-  
“ ver dived but in Summer time, and then on  
“ calm, serene, and sun-shiny Days. They re-  
“ late what is very remarkable, That the bot-  
“ tom of the Sea where they had been, look-  
“ ed like a fine Garden, abundance of things  
“ (which they wanted a Name for) growing  
“ in it resembling short Plants, and branching  
“ out from the main Stocks divers ways, be-  
“ ing white, hard and rugged, but did not  
“ appear to be of the white Coral kind: They  
“ brought

“ brought up some Pieces with them, which  
 “ after they were exposed to the Sun, but not  
 “ before, yielded a most fragrant Smell; one  
 “ little Branch thereof is now in the possession of  
 “ the aforesaid Captain *Hannibal*, and is looked  
 “ upon as a very great Curiosity: When the  
 “ Chest in which the Pieces were repositied was  
 “ opened at the Custom-house Key, a fine Scent  
 “ was diffused round about, which pleased and  
 “ surprized all that were present.

14. By way of confirmation of this memorable  
 passage, I take liberty to observe, That in the  
 Year of our Lord 1718, a *Nevis* Gentleman of  
 my acquaintance, had some business that called  
 him down from thence to the *Danish* Island of  
 Saint *Thomas*, upon the Shore of which he found  
 growing close to the Sea great numbers of much  
 the same things (which the *St. James's Evening*  
*Post* says resembled short Plants,) and which were  
 likewise branching out from the main Stock di-  
 vers ways. He brought some of them up to our  
 Island: They were extreamly white, harder than  
 Chalk, and somewhat rugged; but I do not re-  
 member any fragrant Smell they had, and am  
 absolutely certain, that they were not of the white  
 Coral kind, because so brittle that they would  
 not bear any polishing by way of cheat. *N. B.*  
 None of our *English* *Leeward* Islands produce  
 them,

15. You

15. You will find too in my Collection a milk white Stone not quite so broad as a Half Crown Piece, which in shape is not much unlike a Carnation Flower; The upper or inside part, is entirely composed of exceeding nice Stone Leaves, that are close set together in a wavy form at top, and are full as thin as Carnation Leaves; and the bottom or outside part has a little bit of Stem, jetting out as it were on purpose to direct us, to imagine or fancy the rest of the Stalk, from whence it was by some unknown accident broke off in its fair Garden the Sea. This is of a Coral kind, many pieces whereof I have since seen in your Chamber at *Trinity* College.

16. We have there Land Crabs which high up in our Mountain Woods, make small Burroughs in the Ground like Rabbits; their Flesh is rich (delicious) eating, but their Shells are no ways curious, though of a deep Blood Red colour when boiled; they annually travel down to the Sea, in order to wash and shed their Shells, at which Season we catch them easily, by help of Torches in the Night, which is the time of their travelling. Their Bodies are much smaller than the Bodies of our *European* Sea Crabs, and Nature has supplied them with Claws that are both long and strong as well as slender, which enables them to lift well up their Bodies and to travel apace. — In our Ponds near the Sea we  
catch



catch Pond Crabs of a most beautiful Sky Blue, that are shaded all around the edges with a brownish Yellow, and much less, though far finer shaped, both in Body and Claws, than our *European* ones: But their Shells were not worth bringing home to *England*, because those fine Colours vanished with their Life. We have no Sea Crabs; at least that are fit to eat: Clams stick to our Rocks that are near the Shore, but are not eaten by us.

17. Our *Nevis* Lobsters do exactly resemble the *English* ones, in bulk, colour, and shape, except that their two large Claws are not so big in proportion to their Bodies: but I once found, to the utmost hazard of my life, this remarkable and ugly circumstance attending them, *viz.* Such of them as are found on the Western or Leeward side of our Island are reckoned very fine eating; whereas they that are taken on the Eastern or Windward side are rank Poison, which we attribute to some unwholesome kind of Food they meet with there; some imagine that they meet with veins of *Coperas* there: This Poison works strongly, both by dreadful Vomits and Stools. We have also great numbers of Sea Cray Fishes, that are almost as large as our Lobsters, and are justly reckoned elegant eating.

18. Before I take leave of the *West Indies*, I shall make bold to add one Paragraph about that singularly beautiful Fish called a Dolphin, that is

fo odly drawn out not only upon our common Signs to Inns, but even in Books of credit which seem to carry a fair shew of Accuracy.

19. It is said, He very rarely comes up so high towards *England* as the fortieth degree of Northern Latitude in the *Atlantick* Ocean, though I had the good fortune to see the contrary in no less than five or six instances, at my return from *Neris* to *England*. He is caught in the following manner, *viz.* We fasten the Feather-ends (I mean about four Inches of their Tops or Extremities) of two Goose-quills to a Hook (one on each side,) which being well secured to a Line not much thicker than a common thickish Whipcord, and drawn after us at the Ships Stern when the Wind does not blow too fresh, makes a small rippling in the Sea, not unlike to that of a Flying Fish, when it arises out of the Water to avoid the pursuit of the Dolphin; and the Dolphin being a Fish of Prey seizes (of course) the Hook with the Feathers, and is immediately drawn up into the Ship. He seldom exceeds four feet in length from Nose end to Tail end: and is a very strait-bodied Fish. His Head (as to shape) is exactly the same as it is drawn in Pictures and on Signs: But he being the thickest at the Gills, and growing taperer in a gradual descending line quite down to the Tail, his whole shape may properly enough be compared to a Hand-saw. His  
Head

Head is entirely of the most lively Azure Blue. From the top or rather back part of his Head all along to his Tail, is one continued Fin of a very light brown colour, which somewhat resembled Black Crape that was almost worn out, marked pretty full of round coal-black spots like little Patches set thick on a Lady's Face; and his Tail (if I remember rightly) is the very same. He has two large Fins below close to his Gills, whose colour I do not so well call to mind, tho' I verily think that they resemble his Back Fin. I dare not insist upon his other Fins, for both their Colour and Number have slipped out of my memory, and unluckily were not set down in my book of Remarks. From his Back Fin down to the middle of his Body on each side, his Skin (that has no Scales) is of the finest Azure Blue imaginable, though some People insist upon its being a blueish Green, strewed thick all over with bright gliffling Stars of Gold, Scarlet, &c. and from the middle of his side quite down to his Belly and so up again to the middle of his other side, is the Colour of the fairest beaten Gold, but if I may be allowed the term (as I do sincerely believe I may,) infinitely surpassing it in beauty, and without either Stars or Spots of any Sort: A sight worthy of the greatest Monarchs attention! He lives in compleat beauty for about the space of three minutes, after he is taken out of the Water:

His glorious Colours and Marks do then grow faint and fading, for one minute: And during the other two minutes of his life, they vanish away and return back to their beauty again quicker than thought itself; I do not mean that they return to Perfection of beauty; but to be plain, I want terms adequate to my Ideas, in order to be rightly understood. In short, in five or six minutes time this gay surprizing Object fills the Traveller's Mind, with far more lofty Notions of the great Creator's Wisdom and Magnificence bestowed upon the inferiour part of the Animal World, than ever it was capable of entertaining before. When he is dead he looks just like a dead Salmon, and his Body eats like a Cod-fish, but I think it drier considerably. It is a course Fish. A Maccarel just taken out of the Sea is by far the most beautiful of *English* Fishes in my judgment; but alas! its Colours are infinitely short of those of a Dolphin.

20. You will find in my Collection an Iron, or rather rusty coloured, flat, and round Stone (about the breadth of a Five Shilling Piece but somewhat thicker) that winds circularly in form of a spiral Line, several of which you have since shewed me in Dr. *Woodward's* Collection, known by the name of Snake-stones or *Cornua Ammonis*. I picked it up about nine years ago upon the Sea-Coast of *Lincolnshire*; and upon looking round a  
 little

little narrowly on the Sand, I found several white, thin Shells of the same breadth, shape, and size, filled with Sand, or Gravel, and also with stiffish Clay of different Colours; the Clay of several having, I suppose, been lodged there for a little while only, was somewhat brittle; in others, the Clay having lain longer was of course the firmer and tougher; and in some others, where the thin Shell was almost decayed, I found the Clay to be so strongly cemented together, that it was somewhat difficult to break it with the hand. Pray then why might not that Stone I sent you to *Cambridge* be one of those pieces of Clay thus preserved so long as till petrified? I know your opinion is, That they were formed in such Shells at the time of the Deluge.

*I am, Sir, Your &c.*

W. S.

## L E T T E R II.

S I R,

I Well remember our Discourse about my Voyage to *St. Christopher's*, and Journey to *Chi-  
anne*, *Capisterre*, and up the great Mountain; which (as it seems to suit your taste) I now take the freedom to remind you of, by way of Letter.

1. In the cheerful month of *May*, which generally gives new Life and Vigour to the whole Creation; I set forward about ten a Clock in the Morning from *Charles Town* at *Nevis*, and with an easy, gentle Breeze of Wind arrived at the Port of *Basse Terre* in the Island of *St. Christopher*, before dinner; being all the way agreeably entertained, with a most beautiful Prospect of both the Islands, as well as the *Dutch Isles* of *Eustachia* and *Saba*, together with a Sky, that was not too much clouded, and which of course in so warm a Clime was variegated into such different Shapes and Colours, that my fruitful imagination could discover in them, Mountains and Forests, shady Groves and fertile Plains, Rivers of Ice and Hillocks of Snow, Lakes and Promontories, with Lyons, Bears, Crocodiles, Buffaloes, and other strange Animals; all of which struck my  
Fancy

Fancy with so bright and rapturous a glee as the greatest Philosopher had scarce ever yet the happiness to be touch'd with! In short, the finest Pencil dare not presume to paint out in Perfection so lovely a Landskip, if I may be allowed the term. I do not think I ever saw there, one single Day, which was entirely free from Clouds; for there were always some few to be observed towards the Evening of the very clearest, if not sooner.

2. My Friend from *Cbianne* (which is about eight miles distant from *Basse Terre*) according to promise met and dined with me there, before we set forwards for his House. At first we rode thorough many Sugar Plantations, till we came to the thick Woods, where now and then we passed by a small Cotton Settlement, whose humble and temperate Possessor (Hermit like) lived by vertue of his own and three or four Slaves Labour, with far truer satisfaction in his lonely Retirement, than can be found in stately Palaces, or in the most extravagant and luxurious Cities, where (to use *Milton's* Phrase, book i. line 496.)

————— *The noise*  
*Of Riot ascends above their loftiest Towers,*  
*And Injury and Outrage: and when Night*  
*Darkens the Streets, then wander forth the Sons*  
*Of Belial floren with Insolence and Wine.*

Cotton is a Shrub two yards high or better, that bears a fine Yellow Flower shaped like a Bell : When this Flower drops off, it is succeeded by a darkish green, round, and tough Pod, of the size of a common Walnut : The Pod, as soon as ripe, bursts open in straight lines that are seamed from top to bottom, in three or four several places at an equal distance, exposing the white Cotton, which is then gathered by Negroes. (*N. B.* I speak of common Cotton, for in some kinds of it the Pods are longish.)

3. We were delightfully serenaded all along quite thorough these Woods by an infinite number of Turtle Doves, whose soft notes or cooing joined to the Verdure and Bloom of the Earth, Bushes, and Trees, put me in mind of that passage in *Canticles*, (*viz.* chap. ii. ver. 11, 12, 13.) *Lo the Winter is past, the Rain is over and gone : the Flowers appear on the Earth, the time of singing of Birds is come, and the voice of the Turtle is heard in our Land : The Fig-tree putteth forth her green Figs, and the Vines with their tender Grape give a good smell.* To add to our pleasure, the Sea, at half a mile's distance, beat gently against the Rocks, causing such easy Murmurs, as were enough to lull to sleep any one who was so inclined. These with a sight of the *Conorrhée Hills*, towards which we drew near apace (and whose vast Rocks yielded Shrubs, Corritoes, and other



other Plants of the Aloes kind) afforded us a quite different prospect from that of the Morning.

4. The Sun began now to peep out from under a Cloud; and indeed it soon shone so very warmly, that we made what haste we could to a deep Gill near to the *Conorrhoe* Hills, that runs upwards from the Sea shore about two hours travel. This Gill is large, and grows steeper, the higher we go up from the Sea, being plentifully stocked with Palmetto or Wild Palm, (I never saw above two bearing Palm-trees; they were bigger than my Body and thirty foot tall, but had bore no Dates then) Piemento, Cassia Fistula, Gum Alymnae, and other fragrant Trees, and Ever-greens, from top to bottom, which terminated at the Sea-side with a long Grove of Manchineal Apple-trees.

*N. B.* Our Trees are all Ever-greens; for as fast as one Leaf drops off another succeeds it. Palmetto is much smaller but resembles nearly the bearing Palm-tree, which is exactly as we find it drawn out, and described by Authors. Piemento is the Tree that yields *Jamaica* Pepper, alias All-spice; its Leaves can scarce be distinguished from Bay-leaves, though of a much stronger aromattick smell: We there at *Christmas*, usually adorn our Churches with small Boughs of it, the Fruit being then green upon them, just as your *English* Churches here are decked with Holly  
and

and Ivy at that sacred Season ; in a rich Soil it will grow to be sixty foot high ; vide *Woods Rogers's* account of *Juan Fernandez* (an Island in the South Sea) whose Words in page 129, are as follow, *viz.* Piemento Trees are plenty here, and we see some of sixty foot high and about two yards thick ; and Cotton Trees higher, and near four fathom round in the Stock. *N. B.* That at *Nevis* we have Cotton Trees of the same sort, and not much less in circumference of Body ; but as they yield little Cotton, and are so very tall, we content ourselves with gathering Cotton from the Shrub only, as mentioned in paragraph the second of this Letter. Cassia Fistula is a strait-bodied Tree, thirty foot high, with spreading Branches, from which hang the Pods, that are of a dark brown colour, and about a foot long each ; it is not unlike a Sycamore. Gum Alymnae is a very large-bodied Tree that is at least forty foot high, and the Gum oozes or distills thorough the Bark like Rosin, for about three or four yards upwards from the bottom of the Tree all around it, which puts me in mind of *Milton's* Description of the Trees of Paradise, book iv. line 248. *viz.*

*Groves whose rich Trees sweep odorous Gums  
and Balm.*

The Manchineal is like our *English* dwarf Apple-tree ; its Leaves, in Colour, Shape and Bigness, are much the same with *English* Pear-tree Leaves, but

but with a very thin glutinous matter about both Sides of the Leaf: If a Leaf touches our Cheek, in riding along the Road by them, I know experimentally that it will raise an immediate Blister which ends in a Scab; break a Bough, and there issues out a milk-white Water, that is still more poisonous: the Fruit is much ranker Poison yet. The Fruit is of the size and shape and smell of an *English* Crab.

5. We travelled up the Gill or Gully about two hundred yards, and then fate down in a cool Shade, upon the mossy Banks of a very little but exceedingly transparent River, that ran the whole length of it quite down to the Sea, regaling our selves with some of the sweetest Water I ever drank; where we indulged our Souls with soothing discourse upon the Happiness of a retired state of life, concluding that we wanted nothing just then to render the place a most delicious Paradise, but each of us a fair *Eve*, and a small Cottage.

6. Upon discovering from thence thorough the Boughs of the Trees two large Ships pass by towards the Island of *Eustachia*, I could not help repeating out of *Milton*, book iv. line 159.

————— *As when to them who sail  
Beyond the Cape of Hope, and now are past  
Mozambique, off at Sea North-East Winds blow  
Sabean Odours from the spicy Shore*

*Of Arabie the blest, with such delay  
Well pleas'd they slack their course, and many a  
League  
Pleas'd with the grateful smell old Ocean smiles.*

As none of these Odours can be smelled at a distance, so they only help the Poet to a quaint Simile now and then. *Maundrell* in his Travels from *Aleppo* to *Jerusalem*, (page 85.) does insist, how the fine story about the Apples of *Sodom*, that are by Authors (even of good note) confidently said to grow near to the *Mare Mortuum*, is a fiction of the self same nature, standing upon record for a beautiful allusion only. However I cannot help taking notice, That *Milton*, book 10. line 560. makes use of this very allusion, in describing the Punishment of the fallen Angels, upon *Satan's* return to *Pandemonium*, after having seduced our first Parents, viz.

— *Greedily they pluck'd  
The Fruitage fair to sight, like that which grew  
Near that bituminous Lake where Sodom flam'd;  
This more delusive, not the touch, but taste  
Deceiv'd; they fondly thinking to allay  
Their Appetite with gust, instead of Fruit  
Chew'd bitter Ashes, which th' offended taste  
With spattering Noise rejected:*

book 10. page 560.

7. We had not rested there a quarter of an hour, before we heard a mock Trumpet strike up a little above us, affording a most melodious Sound, by help of the ecchoing Woods and Hills; which was instantly succeeded by a Concert of two Violins, a Base Viol, and a Haut-boy, with good Voices. To be plain, I was so charmed with the Musick, that I almost believed myself to be suddenly transported into enchanted Ground, and asked my Friend (who as well as myself had fate mute all the while) the meaning of it. He conducted me about an hundred yards up higher, by the side of the same Rivulet, where from a small Eminence, we had at forty yards distance the view of a Garden pretty regularly planted (I mean for that part of the World) with considerable Rows of Citron Shrubs, Lemon Shrubs, Orange-trees, Lime-trees, Coco, Shaddock, Pomegranates, Cashew-Cherries, called at *Jamaica* Apples, Bonanoes and Plantains; besides, Ananas or Pine-Apples, Tannio, India Pepper, Ocro, Indian Kale, Asparagus, Lettuces, and indeed all sorts of *European* Roots and Herbs that will grow in so warm a Latitude, particularly with Carrots and Turnips. Shaddock Fruit is the shape of an Orange, and tastes not unlike it, though not with so rich a Flavour; it is of a beautiful Lemon colour, and as big as my two Fists. The Lime Fruit is a kind of Crab or Bastard Lemon, and  
grows

grows on a Tree of the size of a Codlin Apple-Tree, being as big as a Golden Pippin but shaped like a Lemon. Pomgranates are so common that they want no Description. The Cashew Cherry-tree resembles the *English* Dwarf Apple-tree, but the Leaves are of a much lighter yellowish Green; the Cherry as to shape is conical, with the lesser end towards the stalk on which it grows; its bulk is like that of a midling Pear; its Colour is generally speaking of a deep Yellow, and sometimes of a palish Red. At the outside top of the Cherry (which seems hollowed a little by dame Nature for that purpose,) grows the Stone called at *Jamaica* a Nut, quite bare, in the exact shape of a Sheep's Kidney, and is about an inch long, containing in it a large kernel of a fine taste; the Fruit has a harsh and very uncommon Flavour, which I never could admire; when our *West India* young Ladies fancy themselves too much tanned with the scorching Rays of the Sun, they gently scrape off the thin outside Skin of the Stone, and then rub their Faces all over with the Stone; their Faces do immediately swell, grow black, and the Skin being thus poisoned, will in five or six days time come entirely off the Face in large Fleaks, so that they cannot appear in publick under a full fortnight, by which time their new Skin looks as fair as the Skin of a young Child; The Shell of the Stone or Nut is porous, wherein

is lodged a sharp Aromatick Oyl of a caustick quality, which if accidentally tasted of, occasions an uneasy sensation several hours; and this very Oyl is what takes off the Skin of the Face; now though the thing is actually fact, and frequently enough practiced, I do not call to mind above one Lady who owned that she herself had tried it; she said, that the whole operation was painful, but alas! What will not Pride attempt? As these stones are not very uncommon at *London*, I wonder that some of our *English* Ladies who use all other Jezebel-Arts to set off their brown Complexions to the utmost advantage, do not try this Experiment. You find an account of Cocotrees in paragraph 23 of this Letter. Bonano is a Fruit of four or five inches long, the size as well as shape of a midling Cucumber, of a high and grateful flavour, and you will meet with an account of the Tree itself in paragraph 18 of this Letter. The Fruit grows in Bunches that weigh a dozen pounds. Plantain is exactly like the Bonano in all respects, except that its Fruit has an insipid taste. I had almost forgot to acquaint you, that we there have plenty of Cabbages, that in my opinion are full as good as *English* Colly-flowers; they are not propagated by Seed like our's, but in rainy weather we slip off the Sprouts from the Cabbage-stumps, which being stuck into the ground which is just then dug up for that purpose,

de

do immediately grow into Cabbages that have no rank Smell. Ananas or Pine-Apples are so common at *Chelfea* and other fine Gardens here in *England*, that they need no description, and I shall refer you to *Laurence, Miller, Sir Hans Sloan*, and other books that treat of Gardening. I had like to have forgot to acquaint you, that there was then a large company of Gentlemen and Ladies from *Basse Terre*, diverting themselves with Dancing, Singing, Cards, &c. in the Garden, and that we had the pleasure of looking at them thorough the Trees for a considerable time, without being discovered at all. Dr. *George Baglivi* asserts, That as in *Apuglia* (in *Italy*) the manured Fields are plentifully stocked with Olives, Vines, and Wheat; so are the unmanured ones with Rosemary, Sage, Penny-royal, and Thyme, the common Pasturage of the Animals of that Country. I suppose you know that Peach-trees, Myrtle, &c. grow wild in *Virginia* and *Maryland*; and that there are whole Fields of Parsely growing wild at *Bermudas*.

8. But to proceed. The Evening drawing on, it was time to take leave of this sweet delightful *Eden*, mount our Horses, and make the best of our way for my Friend's House at *Chianne*, where we safely arrived about an hour after, coasting it all along thither; that is to say, having the *Atlantick*. Ocean. close by on our right hand, and  
the



the vast *Conorrhoe* Hills on our left; whose spir-  
ing tops then touched the Clouds, and seemed to  
rise to that height in an almost perpendicular  
Line.

9. Next Morning we busied ourselves with an  
agreeable Diversion, *viz.* catching a good Dish of  
Cray-fishes out of *Chianne* River (or more pro-  
perly speaking Brook, it being not above four or  
five yards wide, and shallow, but wondrous clear  
and limpid,) which we poisoned with green To-  
bacco pounded, and mixed with unslacked Lime.  
*N. B.* We have no River Cray-Fishes at *Nevis*,  
*Antigua*, or *Montserrat*. The Poison was so  
strong, that several of the Cray-fishes actually  
crept out of the Water to shun it, which I own  
surprized me not a little; but my Friend assured  
me, that it was a common thing. We afterwards  
dined upon them (with several other more sub-  
stantial Dishes) under the shade of a spreading  
Tamarind-tree, enjoying with the highest gust  
the cool Breezes that blew from off the Sea,  
which was there, scarce a mile from us. Close  
by were some Calabash-trees, that served to make  
a small Grove. The Calabash-tree is full as big  
and as spreading as a large Apple-tree: The Fruit  
is pretty near the size of a man's Head, round  
like a Boy's Marble, and of no use but for Punch  
Bowls, after the inside (which is not eatable) is  
carefully scooped out, when it is almost as thin

and light as the thickest Brown Paper : I sent your Univerfity one of them along with my Shells. Spoons, Bowls, and other Utenfils for Slaves to eat out of are made of them, as I hear, at *Barbadoes*.

10. I went the following Day to the next Parifh on a Vifit to another Acquaintance who lived about a quarter of a Mile or better from the Sea Shore, on the fide of the great Mountain, which juft there rofe up very gradually ; and after a fhort Pauze, I found that it (as well as our *Newis* Mountain) did in a good meafure refemble *Milton's* Description of the lofty Hill which ferved as a mound to Paradise ; vid. book iv. line 131.

*So on he fares, and to the border comes  
Of Eden, where delicious Paradise  
Now nearer, crowns with her Enclofure green,  
As with a rural mound the Champain Head  
Of a fteep Wildernefs, whose hairy fides  
With thicket overgrown, grotesque and wild,  
Accels deny'd ; and over head upgrew  
Insuperable height of loftieft fshade,  
Cedar, and Pine, and Firr, and branching Palm,  
A Silvan Scene, and as the Ranks ascend  
Shade above Shade, a woody Theater  
Of ftateliest view. Yet higher than their tops  
The verdurous Wall of Paradise up fprung :  
Which*

*Which to our general Sire gave prospect large  
Into his nether Empire neighbouring round.*

11. Now in order to prove this resemblance, I must acquaint you, that very early the next Morning we mounted our Horses, and rode up to the Wood Sides, that are above a mile distant from the Sea Sands; where we alighted just as *Phæbus* in his bright Car sprung forth out of *Thetis's* Lap to gild the Mountain Sides with his welcome Beams, being ten of us in number, *viz.* four White Men and six Negroes, well armed with Pistols and Cutlasses to defend us in case of need, against run-away Slaves.

12. Being stripped to our Wastecoats, our Ascent thorough the thick Woods (which swarm with wild Monkeys who venture down in the dark Night to steal Potatoes and other Provisions with so much cunning or craft as to give rise to several strange incredible Stories about them;) our Ascent I say, from being more gradual, soon became very steep indeed, and I took notice that the higher we travelled up, the steeper it was; and not only so, for the large Trees began to dwindle and grow shorter. Some time before we had passed by the last of these Trees, we entered among the Clouds, which felt raw and cold, not unlike to an *English* Fog in a Winter's Morning.

13. From these Woods quite to the top (that is to say, the space of almost half a mile) were no Trees at all, and very rarely a Bush, the Ground being so moist and wond'rous sloping that it would bear nothing better than wild Pines, and other such unprofitable Plants, or Weeds: By the term wild Pines, I mean a sort of Ananalias Pine-Apple-Plants that never bear Fruit. We were now in the thickest of the Clouds, and the Wind blowing somewhat fresh, it took off my Hat, which was however soon retaken by a nimble and as I thought, venturesome Black Fellow. Somewhat higher up we discovered at a little distance a Hut that undoubtedly belonged to some run-away Negroes; there was a small Gut or Gully between it and us, but to speak truth we were too weary to go out of our way to visit it. We could plainly discern a few Foot-steps of some cloven-hoofed Beasts, and guessed them to be young Heifers that had been stolen, and drove thither by the run-away Negroes; though by the by let me tell you, I can by no means conceive how Heifers could possibly clamber up a Precipice, where we ourselves were very hard put to it to ascend for steepness, even by helping up each other: In short, there must be some other and much easier way for them to clamber up, though unknown to us.

14. After

14. After having rested us about two or three times from the Woodside where we quitted our horses, we at last with fatigue enough arrived at the top. Many clouds were at least half a mile beneath our feet then, and as soon as they blew away, was opened to us a lovely view of the lower Woods, Plantations, Houses, and Gardens; besides an unbounded Prospect of the *Atlantick* Ocean, and the *English* Island of *St. Bartholomew* at a great distance. The top was a small Plain not three hundred yards wide, that besides long deadish coloured Grass, produced nothing at all but here and there a diminutive Bush, whose Boughs we found upon trial to be wondrous brittle and inclining to Rottenness, and having its Leaves of a dull and faded green; all of which was no doubt occasioned by the Inclemency of Air, and Coldness (and of course Badness) of Soil in that upper Region. Upon the other side of this top (which we could not for a reason given in Paragraph 17. come at in our journey up that side of the Mountain) may be distinctly seen in a clear day the Islands of *Nevis*, *Montserrat*, *Eustachia*, and *Saba*, which had almost made me conceit myself seated upon that supposed Hill of *Eden* whereon *Adam* had a visionary view of the whole Earth as described book 11. line 385.

*His eye might there command whereever stood  
City, of old or modern fame; the Seat*

*Of mightiest Empire; from the destin'd Walls  
 Of Cambalu, Seat of Cathaian Cam;  
 And Samarch and by Oxus, Temirs Throne;  
 To Pequín of Sinean Kings: and thence  
 To Agra, and Labor, of great Mogul;  
 Down to the golden Chersonese: or where  
 The Persian in Ecbatan sate; or since  
 In Hispanian: or where the Russian-Ksar  
 In Moscow, or the Sultan in Bizance,  
 Turchestan born: nor could his eye not ken  
 Th' Empire of Negus, to his utmost Port  
 Ercoco, and the less maritim Kings;  
 Monbaza and Quíloa, and Melind,  
 And Sofala (thought Ophir) to the Realm  
 Of Congo, and Angola, farthest South:  
 Or thence from Niger Flood to Atlas Mount,  
 The Kingdoms of Almanzor, Fez, and Sus,  
 Morocco and Algiers, and Tremisen;  
 Or Europe thence, and where Rome was to sway  
 The World: in Spirit perhaps he also saw  
 Rich Mexico, the Seat of Montezume,  
 And Cusco in Peru, the richer Seat  
 Of Atabalipa; and yet unspoil'd  
 Guiana, whose great City Geryon's Sons  
 Call El' Dorado.*

I do not suppose there was any Sea Prospect from that lofty Hill of Eden whereon *Adam* had a visionary view, &c. so that I speak in relation to height and distance only: Though upon recollection, I think he might.

15. This Plain ended at the Verge of a vast and deep Cavity, which I shall now describe in the easiest and best method my parts and memory will allow of. This Cavity seems by the eye about a Mile in circumference, is exactly round, and the inside as steep as could be descended into, and that not without the help of the Shrubs and Bushes growing in it, and but in two places only. I looked down into it with Horrour, observing large and continual Clouds of Steam to arise up from the hot Veins of Sulphur, Brimstone, &c, with which the bottom of it every where abounded. The inside of this prodigious Cavity (for at least half way downwards) was solid rock overrun with very short blackish Moss; and the Rim at Top, except in that part of it which joyned to and indeed made part of the plain, was not above twenty, or perhaps in one or two places scarce ten yards wide.

16. A furlong or better off on our left hand towards the South East upon this Rim, is a large rocky Mount called *Mount Misery* from a rash fool-hardy Person, who in attempting to get up so steep a Precipice fell backwards, and met with *Phaeton's* destiny of course. It is the highest point of Land on *St. Christopher's*, and by the inhabitants is computed to measure from the Sea side a perpendicular mile and a half: however, I cannot think it so high by a full quarter of a

mile. This huge Mountain is in the midst of a long chain of lesser and lower ones that run in the middle of the Island from the most Westerly part of it almost as far as the Salt-pond Hills, just as the backbone in a Fish reaches from the tail to the Head.

17. But to proceed : we travelled upon this narrow Rim, with a frightful Precipice on each side of us, for the space of three hundred yards (as near as I can recollect at this distance of time) South West, till we came to a very large single Rock, that took up the entire Breadth of the Rim, and of course obstructed our farther passage thereon. It was as equilateral, and almost as smooth a triangular Pyramid, as if it had been cut out by the Chisel of a skilful Workman ; and from Angle to Angle, I believe it might measure at least seven or eight yards : it was somewhat blunted, or rather broken off at top, and about one third part downwards from the top, it was seemingly cracked quite thorough sideways : The Rock was of a reddish colour, resembling the red part of Oriental Granite, and like Granite too so extremely hard, that the Steel point of a sharp Cutlafs would (by help of the strongest Arm) scarce make a visible impresson on it. To be rightly understood, I must inform you, That *Mount Misery* taking up ( on the Eastern Side ) the whole breadth of the Rim adjoining to its  
foot



foot, and that this triangular Pyramid doing the same on the Western Side, we could walk but half way round it on the North Side which we went up on, and consequently that ( besides the lower Woods, Plantations, Houses and Gardens) we could from thence see nothing but the *Atlantic* Ocean and the Island of *St. Bartholomew*: whereas, if a man goes up on the South Side of this Mountain, in a bright and clear Day, he has a distinct view of the Islands of *Nevis*, *Montserrat*, *Eustachia* and *Saba* that are two *Dutch* Settlements, besides the lower Woods, Plantations, Houses and Gardens in that Quarter of the Island, because he may walk in a Semicircle from *Mount Misery* quite to the triangular Pyramid on his side of the Top, as we did on ours.

18. At the Base Angle adjoining to the vast Cavity grew a large and thick spreading bush, through which we ventured to descend one after another, laying all along upon our Bellies, and so carefully sliding down fourteen or fifteen yards lower still by the help of some wild China Roots which we clung fast to, till we got safe to more Bushes, that lasted for twenty or thirty yards farther: By which time, we found ourselves securely landed in a Wood of wild Bonanoes, that opportunely to our thirst, were ready to gratify our Palate with most clear and excellent Water, which ran out from them, upon sticking  
in

in a Penknife juſt where the Leaves (that are about two yards long and a full foot broad in the middle) do joyn to the top of the Body of the Tree, and ſo make a ſmall hollow between them, as it were on purpoſe to receive the Bleſſings of Heaven, *viz.* the Rain and the Dew. Theſe wild Bonanoes bear neither Boughs nor fruit, and have this remarkable ſingularity attending them, *viz.* That they are Annuals, dying quite to the Ground every Autumn, and ſhooting up again from the Roots in the Spring, till they are bigger than a man's Thigh. The bearing ſort are Annuals too, as well as without boughs; an account of their Fruit you have in Paragraph 7 of this Letter. And as for the Trees themſelves, you may ſee ſome of them, as alſo ſome Sugar Canes, growing in Dr. *Walker's* Garden at your College, in the Phyſick Garden at *Chelſea*, and in that of *Oxford*. The Body of them both is ſo ſtrangely porous that we do not give it the name of Wood; nor indeed does it merit the Name, for a Man with a good ſharp Hatchet, may cut it eaſily thorough at a ſingle ſtroak; it is uſually between two and three yards long, and grows at a diſtance from the Sea-ſide.

19. This Wood (beſides many other kinds that are peculiar to ſo warm a Latitude) was plentifully ſtocked with Mountain Cabbage-trees, which as moſt Authors do odly miſrepreſent,

I shall now describe as they really are. They are called Mountain Cabbages at *Nevis*, because they always are found pretty high in our Mountain there ; and if any of them did formerly grow in our lower Grounds, they are now entirely destroyed. *Woods Rogers*, page 131. tells us, that at *Juan Fernandez* (an Island in the South Sea, in Latitude 34. 10. South ) The Cabbage-trees abound about three miles in the Woods, and the Cabbage is very good ; most of them are on the tops of the nearest and lowest Mountains.

20. People here in *England* run away with the following notions, *viz* ; That they grow to sixty feet in height ; That they bear a Cabbage exactly resembling our's in Colour, Shape and Taste, though vastly exceeding them in bulk as being larger than a *Winchester* Bushel ; and that their Bodies serve for Posts in our Sugar-Mills. One of my Parishioners in the *West Indies* assured me, that in the *Spanish* Island of *Porto Rico* (whither he and some more Raskals went, in order to plunder a Church and Convent during Queen *Ann's* Wars with *France* and *Spain*, but were well beaten, and most of them who ventured to land killed) he saw them sixty foot high at least : However he owned them to be the self same in all other respects with those growing at *Nevis* and *Saint Christopher's*, and added that the Soil there was infinitely preferable to our's, which  
be-

beyond question occasioned the difference in their height. As for my part, I saw none that exceeded thirty feet in height; However, they grow to sixty in *Jamaica*, as well as at *Porto Rico*.

21. It is I think, very improperly termed by us Cabbage; it being about three Feet in length, no thicker than my wrist, of a palish green colour, a little piked just at the end, and grows out of the top of the body of the Tree among the Boughs. It is cut in two in the middle, and six of the pieces being tyed together resemble a short green Faggot, and it is sold in our Market, which by unavoidable necessity is kept every *Sunday* Morning, from Sunrising till nine a clock. The hard outside of this Stick (as I would term it) is taken off; and then the softer inside or Pith, which may be above an inch in Diameter, is boyled, and so serves instead of Turnips (or if you please to call it so, Cabbage) to boyled Mutton, Pork &c. It is of a whitish Colour, and tastes something like the bottom of an Artichoke, though with a much finer Flavour.

22. I do not deny their Bodies to be almost thick enough for Mill-Posts; but I insist, that the Wood is far too porous: and besides, the Gentlemen of *Nevis* and *Saint Christopher's* would never have purchased at a dear rate (to serve as Posts to their Houses and Sugar-Mills) Iron Wood and *Lignum Vitæ*, which were brought from far  
di-

distant Islands ( viz. *Defeada*, *St. Bartholomew*, *Santa Cruz* &c. ) for that purpose, provided Cabbage-trees, which they might have had for cutting up and carrying a few miles home, would have done for such an use. To be sincere and plain, I take Cabbage-trees to be wild Coco's which do not bear Nuts, for they exactly resemble them in all other respects : *Salmon* in his Eastern History says the same.

23. The very highest of the Coco's which do bear Nuts that I ever saw, might ( both in Body and the Boughs that always sprout upwards and spreading from the top of the Body ) amount to forty Feet in height, that is to say, the Body to thirty, and the Boughs to ten. The Body is the exact shape of an Apothecary's large Iron Pestle, viz. of an equal thickness at top and bottom, but somewhat smaller in the middle ; its colour is of a pale Brown, and the Bark smooth. The Boughs are of a most lively Yellow, strait, and tapering like an Angle Rod ; having two rows of green leaves that are very narrow though a foot long apiece, ( except for a little way towards the smaller end ) and close set together the whole length of the Boughs. The Nuts hang at the top of the Body in about a dozen in a Cluster, and may I believe weigh fifteen pounds, or better ; The stringy substance which holds them being wondrous tough, and thicker than my middle Finger.

One

One fingularity of this Tree is, that it is full as big when it first arifes out of the Earth, as when it is thirty years old: I have feen them thicker than my Body, when they were but three foot high; and you will eafily fuppose, that the Boughs are then proportionally fhort, and of courfe muft naturally lengthen, juft as the Tree advances in age; *N. B.* common Asparagus fhots out of the ground in the felf fame manner, their Roots are but tough Fibres refembling the Roots of our English Mulberry-trees. Their Boughs are fecured together at bottom by brown stringy Threads, (about the fize of ordinary Packthread) that grow out of them; and indeed for about a foot fpace from the top of the Body of the Tree upwards, thefe stringy Threads are fo interwove, that they lay full as regularly up and down, and crofs each other, as any coarfe Linnen Cloth poffibly can. You have doubtlefs feen many of the Shells of thefe Nuts, tipped with Silver, for drinking out of. The common Picture of the Tree is very like it; And if I do not greatly miftake, there was one of them in 1728. growing at *Chelfea* Garden, in the Hot-houfe called *Barbadoes*.

24. Cocoa-tree is the Chocolate Nut-tree, and in my time was fcarce enough in our *English* Iflands, but grew in whole Groves on the *Spanifh* Main land, efpecially on the Coaft of *Carraccas*, as alfo upon the Ifland of *Porto Rico*. It nearly

resembles our *English* dwarf Apple-tree, both in Body and Boughs ; but the Leaf which is of a deep Green, is considerably larger and longer than our Apple-tree Leaves. The Nuts, which are the colour (and about the bulk) of an Almond Kernel, do hang fifteen or sixteen together, by a small stringy film inclosed in a Pod, that is the size and shape of a large Cucumber, and is pecked at the upper end. This Pod when thoroughly ripe is of a beautiful yellow Colour, and streaked in several places with blood-red long Spots : when dried, it shrivels up, and turns to a deep brown colour ; I think I gave one of them to Dr. *Woodward's* Collection, along with my Shells. Dr. *Barclay* ( in his *Universal Traveller* ) tells us that the Blossoms of this Fruit are yellow ; but I do not remember, that I ever saw the tree in bloom ; and indeed the tree is so scarce, that I believe we had not above a score of them growing at *Nevis*.

25. But let us proceed on our Journey. We kept on in a very steep descent down thorough this Wood of Cabbage-trees &c, quite to the bottom of the aforementioned huge Cavity, which led us into an uneven spot of ground, consisting of thirty Acres and upwards. At our entrance (close by on our right hand) was an exceeding large Rock that weighed many tuns, jetting out of the side of the Hill ; and at the bottom part of this Rock, were three or four round holes in  
the

the Earth, full as wide as my Hat crown, out of which issued fast very hot Steams (like the Smoak out of Chimnies,) that tinged the holes all about their Edges with seemingly very fair Brimstone : And to speak our thoughts ingenuously, we did not care to come nearer them than six or seven yards, lest the ground should prove so hollow, as to sink in and bury us before we were dead.

26. Our first entrance upon this uneven spot, was by crossing a little plain which was so sulphureous that it would bear nothing but deadish coloured long Grass or rather Weeds, with a few short, and brittle, or rottenish Bushes: At last we arrived at what is vulgarly called the *Devil's Coppers* on a hill side; there were two or three of them, two yards asunder from each other in an almost direct line, and they were each three foot in diameter; we had no convenience for plumbing them; however they seemed not to be very deep, and had but a small stream running from them, which looses itself among the long Grass: the Water in them was of a mud colour, and rose to within a foot of the surface of the ground, boiling fiercer than ever I saw a Sugar Copper, and sending up very strong Clouds of Steam into the Air; no kind of Grass would grow within twelve yards of them, the Soil being wholly Sulphur, and so excessive hot, that



we immediately perceived it to be warm, thorough thick Shoes that we had bought on purpose for this expedition. A Negro-man was strangely frightened, and altered his black colour to yellowish at first sight of them ; we could not dissuade him from believing that *Jumbee* (that is to say the Devil) had his residence underneath them. We stood above two yards off from them.

27. Some of our company went considerably farther up the Hill, where they discovered nothing new, but only found a continuation of this sulphurous Earth, with large quantities here and there of pure Brimstone, some of which they brought away, not only as a specimen to show their Neighbours (very few of whom were at so much pains to undergo for Curiosity's sake this fatiguing Journey,) but likewise for real use. The rest of us descended back to the Plain, on the south side whereof was a Pond about forty yards over, and knee deep, that had no Springs, but is plentifully supplied by the Rains, which in that warm Latitude fall so heavily that nobody stirs out of doors in them, unless compelled to it by unavoidable necessity. As I was dirty all over from head to foot by scrambling up and down so many Precipices, I walked into and sat down in it, on purpose to wash myself clean, which I soon did: Upon cutting up a piece of Clay from the bottom that consisted entirely of it, I found

it to my great surprize as beautifully veined as the finest hard Castile Soap ; and indeed I should not be found guilty of an Hyperbole, in asserting it to look as fair as the nicest polished blue veined Marble.

28. Near to this Pond grew a convenient bed of common Rushes, upon which we spread our Table-cloth, and then sitting down around it each Gentleman on his Cloak cross-legged, (that is to say Turkish or Taylor fashion,) we made a hearty Dinner upon a quarter of cold roasted Lamb with a good Sallad, wishing a health to all our Friends round this great Mountain in a glass of rich *Madeira* Wine : And after dinner we sat two hours at least to refresh Nature which was a little fatigued, making what Observations we could upon so lonesome, and if I may be indulged in the term, beautifully dismal situation.

29. At first the Sky was perfectly clear and serene, and we perceived several Mountain Kites (not unlike the English ones as near as we could guess, at fifty or sixty yards distance) hovering over our heads ; but in a quarter of an hour or less, the Clouds fell down the vast cavity apace almost close to us, rendering the Air on a sudden raw and cold : After a hasty and heavy shower of rain that once more washed me clean, they mounted up again out of the top or rim of the  
Cavity,

Cavity, and so vanished till the Sky was as clear as before. I saw very few small Birds there (not above twenty I believe,) and none of the English kind. *N. B.* That at *Nevis* and *St. Christopher's*, we have a few Birds called Mountain-Thrushes, that are wondrous fat, and resemble the English ones; and at the Sun's declension towards the Tropick of Capricorn from the Equator, we are visited by a few Swallows. Our other Birds are a small kind of Screech Owls, Noddies, Spoon-Bills, Pelicans, Boobies, common Pidgeons, two or three sorts of wild Pidgeons, Ground-Doves a beautiful sort of bird, and Humming-Birds: In the dusk of the Evening we have some Batts flying about; but it was never my fortune to knock down one, though I employed a sharp-sighted and nimble Negro several times for that purpose. We every quarter of a minute heard an odd tho' regular and periodical noise (which sounded exactly like the creaking of a Sugar-mill, or Cart when it wants greasing) from two or three different places that were not very far from us, tho' we could not possibly find out the cause of it; and I took notice that we could not hear this noise near so distinctly at the bottom where we dined, as we did about forty or fifty yards before we came down to it, though it seemed to proceed wholly from the bottom. We beheld continual Clouds of Steam arising out of the Veins of Sul-

phur, Brimstone, and hot breathing holes, upon which (as I said before) I looked down with horror from the Rim or Verge at the top of this Cavity. Many of the Rocks on all sides round us were of such strange uncouth shapes, as would I am apt to think, have puzzled an expert Geometrician to delineate: And beneath these monstrous Rocks, were thick Woods quite down to the aforementioned uneven Plain. In short; a Man who would make farther Discoveries, and give a more accurate description of this Place, should carry along with him a Tent to sleep in, and so spend two or three days there. What alas! signifies a two hours visit to such a Place?

30. This Cavity from top to bottom (upon a serious review of it after dinner) could not exceed three hundred yards in perpendicular depth in my own opinion, though the rest of my Companions contended strenuously for more; and indeed it was merely to comply with them that I allowed so much, for it certainly could not possibly exceed two hundred and twenty yards: It chagrines me to think that a Traveller must either forego Truth in some cases, or else differ with his Company. However, upon maturely weighing the whole state of this Mountain, we unanimously agreed, that it must be on fire underneath us, and that this Cavity where we then sat was formerly (perhaps ages ago) occasioned by some furious  
and

and dreadful Eruption, when it might be a *Vulcano* for a while, like *Ætna*, *Vesuvius*, or *Strombolo*. Before these Islands were inhabited by *Europeans*, the *Charibees* their ancient Natives were entire strangers to all sorts of Literature, and of course must want Annals to transmit down to Posterity so memorable an Occurrence. And here, a difficult Quæry does naturally arise, *viz.* What Right had we to dispossess the honest *Charibees* of it, who are now almost extinct in race, and confined to the sorry Island of *Dominico*; nay, I lately heard from a Surgeon aboard a Ship of Sir *Chaloner Ogle's* Squadron who touched there, That the *French* have lately made a Settlement at *Dominico*; so that I suppose the poor Remains of the *Charibees*, must soon pack up their alls, and be gone to some one of the uninhabited Islands. To deal plainly with you, I do not remember any Christian rule that does in the lowest degree countenance such cruel acts, nor did I ever yet meet with a Casuist, who durst take up the Cudgels to defend them; and our Ancestors who dispossessed them are not justifiable: Nay, to perpetrate such Actions under the specious title or pretence of civilizing them, does in my mind vastly enhance the horrid Crime. But enough upon that Topick for the present, because I design to make it the business of my next Letter to demonstrate, that we of this Century do tread in

the Foot-steps of our Ancestors who dispossessed the honest *Charibees*.

31. We returned back again the same way, and after a long day's fatigue, reached my Friend's House just as it grew dusky; where I stayed three or four days, and then travelled home to *Nevis*, where I safely arrived without any thing extraordinary happening to me. Father *Ovalle* says, that on the top of the *Cordillera* or Mountains of *Andes*, they cannot see the Country below for Clouds, though the Sky over their heads is clear and bright, and the Sun shines with admirable beauty. It was the same case with us on the top now at our return from the Cavity, for about the space of four or five minutes; and had our Mountain been as high as the *Cordillera*, it might have continued so for as many Days, or perhaps Weeks together. Not but that the Clouds blow quite over the summits of the highest Mountains, such as the *Cordillera*, *Alps*, *Pyrenees*, *Apennines*, &c. *Woods Rogers*, page 21, insists, That they saw the *Pico Teneriff* plain but once whilst they continued at the Port of *Oratava*, it being generally clouded; you may (adds he) often see the top above the Clouds, when the rest is all covered with them.

32. *N. B.* In my Parish of *St. John* in the Island of *Nevis*, there is a considerable spot of sulphurous ground on the south side, at the upper

per end of a deep rupture in the earth vulgarly called Sulphur Gut, which is so excessive hot (like that near the *Devil's Coppers* in St. *Christopher's*) as to make us immediately feel it thorough our Shoe Soals. And I must farther assure you, That two Doctors (my particular acquaintance) were so curious as to bury some Eggs about an inch deep in that spot for the space of three or four minutes, in which small time they were full as hard quite thorough, as boyling or roasting could make them.

33. At the foot of a declivity adjoining to the south side of *Charles Town* our Metropolis, we have a little hot River called *the Bath* (supposed to flow from the aforementioned Sulphur-ground, which is not above three quarters of a mile higher up in the Country) that runs half a mile or better before it looses itself in the Sea-sands. I knew a Negro Boy who was sent down from *Barbadoes* to *Nevis* for that very purpose (after being twice salivated in vain) cured of a very bad Leprosy by using it; and indeed all distempered People both Whites and Blacks find great benefit by it: The Salivations had caused the Boy to break out in running Sores or Ulcers all over from head to foot, and they being added to the Leprosy, made him a sad (rueful) spectacle; however, by drinking and washing three or four times a day, for an hour at least each time, in the water of this  
D 4 River,

River, he went back to his Master found and clean at two months end. This is a confirmation of what Sir *Hans Sloan* says, in page 45, of his Voyage to *Jamaica*, viz. The Bath is here taken notice of by some Travellers, as *Harcourt* and *Smith*. The first says it cures the Leprosy, and is good in Coughs, it curing the Author, who drank and bathed. It also remedies burning with Gunpowder, and swelled Legs, *Harcourt*, *Purchas*, 44. The second tells us, That it cured Men in two or three days, who were tormented with a burning swelling, as scalding from the Dew of Trees, *Smith's* Obs. pag. 57. I guess, that *Smith* means here Manchineal Trees, under whose shade some of his Men had inconsiderately lain down for repose, or stood to escape a shower of Rain, or perhaps cut down Wood for firing.

34. I myself bathed in it once a fortnight, and own that it contributed not a little to my Health and Vivacity. I usually went in at nine a Clock at night; and observed, That in two minutes time the sweat was ready to blind me, and that in about three minutes more I was obliged to quit it through faintness of spirit. Upon stepping out of it unto the green bank, the wind blew so exceeding cold that I should almost have fancied myself instantaneously transported to *Nova Zembla*, or *Greenland*; that is to say, we have a perpetual breeze of the Trade-wind that runs from East to  
West,



West, which refreshes us in the Day, but is cool enough in the Night, and of course must prove intensely cold when we just come out of so hot a Bath. I do not mean that it blows directly from the East Point ; for it varies from North-East to South-East, according to the place and position of the Sun, and in *October* it generally blows directly from the North ; we have no Land and Sea Breezes, as is usual at *Jamaica*. However, half a pint of strong *Madeira* Wine enabled me to cloath, put on my Riding Coat, and go briskly home ; the next Morning I was almost as nimble as a Mountebank's Tumbler. When I lived at *Charles Town*, which I did for the last nine Months of my stay in that Country, it was my custom to walk to this River every Morning at Sun-rising, to drink a pint of its water, which I found operated both by Stool and Urine. Some of my Acquaintance would drink of it till they puked , and say they found great benefit by so doing ; but as I have an aversion to puking, I never cared to use it in that way.

35. Towards the Sea-side is a particular spot of ground in this River, where a Man may set one foot upon a Spring so wondrous cold that it is ready to pierce him to the very heart, and at the same moment fix his other foot upon another Spring so surprisngly hot, that it will quickly force him to take it off again : But the Water there being full  
my

my Chin deep, and I no swimmer, I durst not venture so far in, as to feel the Springs by way of Experiment; however several of my Friends, whose Veracity might be depended on, assured me of its truth.

36. At another place about two miles and a half to the Southward of *Charles Town*, is a very sharp point of Land that jets out a considerable way into the Sea, leaving a small sandy Bay on each hand; upon the rocky extremity whereof I stood, whilst a tall Negro Man slipped down off it into the Water, which was rather above his Chin deep there; he then stooped down, and took up some Sand that was very warm when he gave it into my hand, affirming the Spring at the bottom of the Sea under him, to be so wondrous hot, that he could scarce venture to set his foot upon it: And give me leave to acquaint you, that the Negro's Feet are grown so callous by constantly travelling over hard Rocks, that they can have little feeling in them; in short, that Spring must be hot indeed.

37. A new hot Spring was in 1718, discovered in Windward Parish, upon clearing of a Wood in order to plant the ground with Sugar-Canes, just above Camp-ground; but I was never at the trouble of paying it a visit, hearing that it was nothing extraordinary. It was no doubt always before known to the Negroes who frequented those

those Woods. Black-Rock Pond is about a quarter of a mile distant Northwards from *Charles Town*; the Water whereof is milk warm, occasioned no doubt, by a mixture of these hot with cold Springs, and yet it yields excellent Fishes in their kind, *viz.* Silver-Fishes, Slimguts, and the best Eeles in the world perhaps: Silver-Fish has a bright deep body of about eight inches long, which tastes like an English Whiting: Slimgut has a large Head, in too great a size to its Body, which may be from ten to two-and-twenty inches long; it eats like our Gudgeons, and is not unlike them in colour: Their Eeles have no rank taste at all, which makes them so much admired. For a farther account of this Pond, see paragraph 9, 10, 11, and 12, of my first Letter.

38. We are disturbed not a little by frequent Earthquakes, which we look upon to be caused by these Veins of Sulphur, Brimstone, &c. that being over-heated, either blow up on a sudden like a Granade or Bomb-Shell, at least shake the ground till it gets vent out into the open Air, or else burn gradually away, leaving the ground about them so hollow till it at last drops in: The former of which cases was (in my opinion) the fate of the great Mountain at St. *Christopher's*, when the prodigious Cavity was made; for it seems to have undergone some such terrible Convulsion. Earthquakes are observed there to be most frequent in  
hot

hot and dry years; and when I lived at our Mountain Plantation pretty near the Woods side, I observed that the moment we felt an Earthquake, or rather in the preceeding moment, was an odd kind of soft rustling noise, which I attributed to the sudden motion caused thereby among the leaves of the Trees and Shrubs growing just up above us, and which could never be heard in our Bath Plain Plantation, as not being loud enough for that end.

39. And indeed the self-same thing happened when I was in the *West Indies*. For in the year 1718 (or thereabout) one Mr. *Boyd* a Merchant going from Saint *Christopher's* in a Sloop towards *Barbadoes*, and being out of sight of all Land, on a suddain, in the forenoon (if I mistake not) the Sky grew so dark, and such a horrible Noise (far surpassing the loudest Thunder) was the same moment heard, insomuch that they all believed the final Dissolution of Nature's Frame to be just then commencing; there falling likewise instantaneously so thick a Shower of Ashes, that the Sloop's Deck was covered two or three inches deep with them. They in fright enough turned back homewards; and Mr. *Boyd* shewed me some of the Ashes, which exactly resembled *Holman's* Ink Powder. It was soon after found out, That a large Mountain in the Island of Saint *Vincent* (that in my time was wholly inhabited by *Negroes*

*groes* who escaped out of a *Guinea* Ship that was cast away unfortunately there many years ago) abounding in Veins of Sulphur and Brimstone blew up at once, *viz.* Woods, Rocks, &c. all together, which must be allowed to cause a most dreadful Explosion. As I was always curious in things of a rare nature, I took notice that very day (as I was riding in *Gingerland* Parish,) That I heard six or seven dull bounces of noise resembling those of Cannon at a great distance pretty quickly following each other at the exact time of this Explosion: as the Sky was quite clear in the eye of the Wind, and as none of my acquaintance there took the same notice of the thing, I durst not venture to insist much upon hearing those dull bounces till I had seen Mr. *Boyd*. I suppose the Weather to be somewhat thick and hazy, which might be the true reason why Mr. *Boyd* and the Sloop's Crew did not see Land; for they must certainly be nearer to Saint *Vincent's* than they reckoned themselves to be. A Narrative of this uncommon affair (with more circumstances attending it) was shortly after transmitted home to *England* and printed, perhaps among the *Philosophical Transactions*.

40. During my stay at *Nevis* (where I received the highest acts of Generosity and Friendship from every body) which was upwards of five years, I felt several (at least a dozen) Earthquakes, but

but none of them did us any farther harm, than frightening us, and cracking the Walls of a few Boiling-houſes and Ciſterns. The longeſt and fierceſt of them happened about one a clock in the morning ſometime in the year of our Lord 1717. It bounced me up in bed, and of courſe wakened me, ſhook the whole houſe (which was built all of Wood except the underpinning) ſo as to make it crack loudly, and laſted about two minutes and a half, as was judged by every one in the Iſland. In ſhort ; our Fear then was inexpreſſible ; and perhaps that very Paſſion of Fear might cauſe the minutes to ſeem longer than they really were : Surely it could not have affected me more, to have marched Soldier-like up to the mouth of an Enemy's Cannon ; and yet (which I own is not to be accounted for) the very moment it ſtopped, we were no more concerned than if it had never happened at all.

41. One Mrs. *Akers* of *Nevis* was a Native of *Port Royal* in *Jamaica*, and lived there in the year of our Lord 1692, when the great Earthquake made ſuch a diſmal havock and deſtruction, as will hardly ever be forgotten by the Inhabitants of that Iſland. She told me, That the earth opened wide, ſwallowed her with many others, and then immediately cloſed up again ; ſhe ſaid, ſhe was in a ſtate of inſenſibility during her ſhort ſtay there. It could not exceed the tenth part of a mi-

minute, before it opened once more to vomit some of them up again. I asked her what might be her thoughts of the matter just the moment before the Earth swallowed her down; and she answered, that imagining herself upon the brink of a boundless Eternity, she put up a short ejaculation to Almighty God, begging him to pardon her Sins, and to receive her Soul. The Hiatus she fell into was all Water, so that being very wet she received no other harm, excepting in one of her Cheeks, which grated a little against something that did but just draw blood. This watery Hiatus closed again the next moment, catching hold of some people by a Leg, of others by the middle of the Body, and of others some by the Arm, &c, detaining them in dismal torture, but immovably fixed in the ground, till they, with almost the whole Town besides, sunk under Water; which happen'd within three minutes after she had got safe on board a Ship then riding at anchor in the Harbour. She told me too, how that great Earthquake split one of the vast Blue Mountains, rendering a Road that lay over it unpassable. But you will meet with a better and more particular Narrative of this affair among the *Philosophical Transactions* of the *Royal Society*.

42. Let us return to *Nevis*. About twenty years before my arrival, there was so violent a shock, that the Sea retired a good Furlong from

*Charles*

*Charles* Town, and in two minutes, or a little more, came back again to its usual bounds, which are within twenty yards of it; the Foundation Rock in the lower part of the Town, bursting at the same instant, and casting out a considerable quantity of Water; and indeed some of the marks of this bursting were visible enough in my time. This Convulsion was on a *Sunday* in the Afternoon, whilst some of my Parishioners were drinking a bowl of Rum Punch, which one of them had then in his hand, in order to set it down upon the table; and so dear a lover of the good creature was he, that he assured me, he did not spill a single drop, though the Bowl was two thirds full. A huge piece of our *Nevis* Mountain, which in my judgment is considerably higher than the Mountain at *Saint Christopher's*, fell down, and left a monstrous rocky spot of it quite naked and bare, which continues in that state to this very day. Our *Nevis* Mountain has been measured with a *Quadrant* from the Bay at *Charles* Town, and is said to be exactly a mile and a half in perpendicular height, though to tell truth I do not think it so high; it is far higher than the Black Mountain called *Coal* in *Norway* however, and that too called *Skiddaw* in *Cumberland*, both of which I have seen. Not long after this violent Shock, a Workman who with many others were building a House upon the lower part of *Charles*

Town,



Town, struck an Iron Crow (in a hole of about a foot deep) against the Foundation Rock, in order to dig the hole deeper : The Rock it is true broke, but the Iron Crow sunk far too deep ; for a Lignum-vitæ Post of a foot diameter and fifteen foot long was no sooner tried to be fixed there, than it followed the Crow, and neither of them were ever after seen above ground : However, they covered over the Hole which was filled with water immediately upon the breaking up of the Foundation Rock, not daring to build There ; but like thoughtless and incurious Folks, did not with a long Line and Plummet, try how deep the Water in the Hole was. My own opinion of the matter is ; That though no one has lost his life by this Earthquake, yet hereafter, That all that part of *Charles Town* will one time or other sink down into the Sea (by the Shock of a more violent one) as *Port Royal* in *Jamaica* did.

43. Mariners pretend that the long run of *Charibee* Islands that reach from *Florida* down a great way into *South America*, were formerly joyned all together, being changed from Main Land into Islands by such Earthquakes and Eruptions : And the Reasons assigned for this very odd Conjecture are as follow, *viz.* That most of the larger ones, such as *Nevis*, *Saint Christopher's*, *Montserrat*, *Guardaloupe*, *Saint Vincent's* &c, are full freighted with veins of Sulphur and Brimstone,

stone, which being overheated are the certain Causes of these Earthquakes and Eruptions; and likewise, That they very rarely meet with above sixty fathoms of Water between any of them: But to be plain and serious, This is a meer whimsical Chimæra; and they may as well assert they are perfectly acquainted with the state of *Terra Australis incognita* which no one ever yet saw. Mr. *Tyrrel* and other Authors of good note, have suggested, that *England* was once joyned to *France*, and of course made part of the Continent: But alas! I cannot credit their Conjecture; for I fancy, that the Straits between *Calais* and *Dover* were just as wide in *Julius Cæsar's* days as they are now; and as for their state before that famous Epocha, I presume it may not be thoroughly known. Mr. *Howel* (who wrote before Mr. *Tyrrel*) in his Familiar Letters, pag. 364, is of that opinion.

44. As the Island of *Nevis* lies in the sixteenth Degree of Nothern Latitude, so you must of course conclude, that twice in the year our Body can cast no Shadow at Noon, viz. when the Sun is right over our heads, either in going Northwards for the Tropick of *Cancer*, or in travelling down back again Southwards towards the Equinoctial Line.

45. The heat of the Country makes us perspire mightily; we are rarely costive; Water  
Melons

Melons and other Fruits do contribute to a plentiful discharge of Urine : and these are certainly the true reasons why we are seldom troubled with any other Distemper but a Fever ; which I confess is bad enough ; for it often sweeps away great numbers of People, especially in the Month of *October*, when the Trade Wind which is the natural Wind for that Climate veers from East to North. *Jamaica* is a sickly Island, occasioned by an excessive faint Heat, and the People's Intemperance ; they have many Distempers there. Water Melons are of five or six different sorts, and some of them full as big as my Head ; They melt in our mouth like a Peach, and are in my opinion far the finest Fruit I ever tasted ; We eat vast numbers of them. Our other Fruits are Musk Melons, Bonanoes, Pine-apples, Oranges, Shaddocks, Penguins, Black Cherries, Sea-side Grapes, Belle-Apples, and Guavuas. Musk-melons are the same with our *English* ones. Bonanoes and Shaddocks are already described in paragraph 7<sup>th</sup> of this Letter. Oranges there, are in great perfection. Penguins are of two sorts ; the small and long sort are too tart for my palate, and are used for Gargling the Mouth in Fevers ; and the larger and round sort (of the size of an Apple) were liked by every body ; they have a thick Husk which covers the Fruit that is of a milk white colour, and full of

wondrous small coal-black Seeds; they taste not unlike a Strawberry, and are among many called by that name. Black Cherries grow wild in our Woods, and have somewhat of the flavour of *English* Black Cherries. They have little round risings like Blackberries or Mulberries, tho' much less. Sea-side Grapes grow in large bunches near the Sea-shore, upon Trees about the size of *English* Apple-trees; their Colour is red but their Taste is far too sweet. Bell-Apples are the size of a smallish Golden Pippin, of a deep yellow colour, and taste very like a Gooseberry, having small Seeds in them just like English Gooseberry Seeds. Guavas are a strong Astringent, of the bigness of a Crab, exactly round, yellow, and have a flavour like English Black Currans, but much higher and tarter. I had almost forgot to tell you, that at *Antigua* I eat a Fruit called by the *Spaniards* Sappadillo; it was larger than our Burgamy Pears, but of their exact shape and colour; they are esteemed to be the richest Fruit in the World; but after all, I thought their Flavour far too high and musky; They did not, I believe, grow at any other of our English Leeward *Charibbee* Islands; but I hear, that the *Dutch* at *Curracooa* have plenty of them.

46. I once remember a dropsical Case, which being very singular, and different from what I have ever before or since heard of, I shall conclude

clude my Letter with it. An *Irish* Gentleman there, with whom I was very intimate, and who was unfortunately married to a most grievous Shrew, did (in order to drive sorrow and care away) drink himself into so deep a Dropsy, that the Doctor durst not venture to tap him, as expecting his Death every day: but Providence exerted itself most signally, in behalf of so rare a Blessing as an honest Lawyer, and honest Lawyers I have known; for in one Night's Time, his Belly (from the size of a Barrel) fell quite down to its usual bulk, by means of a violent Sweat, and a vast discharge of Urine. The Doctor and all the Gentleman's Friends begged of him to take warning, and to refrain from hard-drinking for the future, but to no purpose, for he would not follow the advice; the Dropsy of course seized him a second time, and (to the great surprize of us all) went away again by virtue of another violent Sweat, and another vast discharge of Urine. This is matter of fact, to which I was an eye-witness, though scarce to be credited in a cold Climate, where most People will uncharitably insist, that I make far too free with the Privilege of a Traveller. He afterwards (by the persuasion of us all) to be rid of this grievous Shrew, went away to *Bermudas* or the *Summer Islands*, that are so beautifully described in *Waller's* Poems, perfectly recovered his Health there, and

being admirably well versed in his Profession, fell into great Business immediately.

47. Among the different sorts of Fruit I might have set down these following ones, *viz.* Tamarinds, Pomgranates, Plums, Mamma-Apples, Mamma-Supports, and Prickle Pears. Tamarinds are used by our Doctors in Fevers, as well as in Punch, when Oranges and Lemons are hard to be come at. Pomgranates are to my Taste a very insipid Fruit, and sold commonly enough at *London*. Plums grow upon Trees that are as big as English Oaks, are of a deep yellow colour, have a strong smell, are tart in the mouth, and at the same time have something of the flavour of an English Black Curran. Mamma-Apples and Mamma-Supports<sup>a</sup> were far too sweet and luscious for my Palate. Prickle Pear (both with the red and yellow Flower) is seldom so much as tasted of by us, and is called by our English Gardiners *Ficus Indica*, but for what reason is a mystery to me; for in the *West Indies* we have the same kind of Figs with those which grow in *Spain* and *England*, though with this material difference, *viz.* That the *European* Figs have far too luscious a Taste, whereas the *West Indian* have a very fine picquant Flavour. Prickle Pear needs no description, since it grows at *Chel-*

<sup>a</sup> Sir Hans Sloan calls them *Mammee* and *Mammæ Sapotas*.

*sea*, my Lord *Trevor's* at *Bromham*, Dr. *Walker's* of your College, and I believe at all other such Gardens. We have also an ordinary Fruit called *Papas*, that are pretty large, and as yellow as Gold, but not regarded by White Men: the Negroes I think boil them.

Good Sir,

Your Patience is I fear by this time quite wearied out: However as you may perhaps imagine, my Journey to *St. Christopher's*, and indeed my whole five years stay in the *West Indies*, to be more pleasant than it really was, I make so free as to acquaint you, that the afore-mentioned Earthquakes, Hurricanes, excessive Heat, Muskitoes, &c. do vastly over-balance this Pleasure.

*I am, S I R,*

*Your assured Friend,*

W. S.

# LETTER III.

SIR,

**I**N Paragraph the thirtieth of my last Letter to you, I started the following *Quære*; namely, What Right had we to dispossess the ancient *Charribes* of their Inheritance many years ago, and to confine them to the sorry Island of *Dominico*, after having almost extirpated their race? I there blame our Ancestors for unjustly entering upon their Lands: but we of this Generation are no better inclined, as evidently appears from the Articles of Friendship and Commerce that were proposed by the Lords Commissioners for Trade and Plantations to the Deputies of the *Cherrokee* Nation on the Borders of *South-Carolina*, by his Majesty's Order, on *Monday* the seventh day of *September* in the year of our Lord 1730.

“ Whereas You *Scayagusta Oukab*, Chief of the Town of *Tassetsa*, You *Tethtowe*, You *Clogcittab*, You *Skalikosken Ketagusta*, You *Collamach*, You *Oucounacou*, have been deputed by *Moytoy* of *Telliquo*, with the Consent and Approbation of the whole Nation of the *Cherrokee Indians*, at a general Meeting at *Nikofsen*, the third day of *April* A. D. 1730, to attend Sir *Alexander Cummin*, Bart. to *Great Brittain*, where you have seen the Great King  
*George*



“ *George*, at whose feet the said *Alexander*  
“ *Cummin*, by express Order for that purpose  
“ from the said *Moytoy*, and all the *Cherokee*  
“ People, has laid the Crown of your Nation,  
“ with the Scalps of your Enemies, and Feathers  
“ of Glory in token of your Obedience: Now  
“ the King of *Great Brittain* bearing love in his  
“ heart to the powerful and great Nation of the  
“ *Cherokee Indians*, his good Children and Sub-  
“ jects, his Majesty has empowered us to treat  
“ with you here, and accordingly we now speak  
“ to you, as if the whole Nation of the *Cherro-*  
“ *kees*, their Old Men, Young Men, Wives and  
“ Children, were all present; and you are to  
“ understand the Words we speak, as the Words  
“ of the Great King our Master whom you have  
“ seen, and we shall understand the Words you  
“ speak to us, as the Words of all your People  
“ with open and true Hearts to the Great King:  
“ and thereupon we give four Pieces of Striped  
“ Duffles.

“ Hear then the Words of the Great King  
“ whom you have seen, and who has command-  
“ ed us to tell you, that the English every where  
“ on all sides of the great Mountains and Lakes,  
“ are his People and Children; that their Friends  
“ are his Friends, and their Enemies are his E-  
“ nemies: that he takes it kindly that the great  
“ Nation of the *Cherokees* have sent you hither a  
“ great

“ great way to brighten the Chain of Friendship  
 “ between him and them, and between his Peo-  
 “ ple and your People: that the Chain of Friend-  
 “ ship between him and the *Cherokee Indians* is  
 “ like the Sun, which both shines here and also  
 “ upon the great Mountains, and equally warms  
 “ the Hearts of the *Indians* and of the *English*:  
 “ That as there are no Spots or Blackness in the  
 “ Sun, so there is not any Rust or Foulness in this  
 “ Chain; and as the Great King has fastened one  
 “ end of it to his own Breast, he desires you will  
 “ carry the other end of the Chain, and fasten  
 “ it well to the Breast of *Moytoy* of *Telliquo*, and  
 “ to the Breasts of your old Wife Men, your  
 “ Captains, and all your People, never more to  
 “ be broken or made loose; and hereupon we  
 “ give two Pieces of Blue Cloth.

“ The Great King and the *Cherokee Indians*  
 “ being thus fastened together by the Chain of  
 “ Friendship, he has ordered his People and  
 “ Children the *English* in *Carolina*, to trade with  
 “ the *Indians*, and to furnish them with all man-  
 “ ner of Goods that they want, and to make haste  
 “ to build Houses, and to plant Corn from *Charles*  
 “ Town towards the Town of the *Cherokees* be-  
 “ hind the Great Mountains; for he desires that  
 “ the *Indians* and *English* may live together as the  
 “ Children of one Family, whereof the Great  
 “ King is a kind, and loving Father. And as the  
 “ Great

“ Great King has given his Land on both sides  
“ of the great Mountains to his own Children the  
“ *English*, so he now gives to the *Cherokee In-*  
“ *dians* the Priviledge of living where they  
“ please; and hereupon we give one Piece of Red  
“ Cloth.

“ The Great Nation of the *Cherokees* being  
“ now the Children of the Great King of *Great*  
“ *Brittain*, and he their Father, the *Cherokees*  
“ must treat the *English* as brethren of the same  
“ Family, and must be always ready at the Go-  
“ vernours command to fight against any Nation,  
“ whether they be white men or *Indians*, who  
“ shall dare to hurt the *English*; and hereupon  
“ we give Twenty Guns.

“ The Nation of the *Cherokees* shall on their  
“ part take care to keep the trading Path clean,  
“ and that there be no Blood in the Path where  
“ the *English* White Men tread, even though  
“ they should be accompanied by any other Peo-  
“ ple with whom the *Cherokees* are at war;  
“ whereupon we give Four hundred weight of  
“ Gunpowder.

“ That the *Cherokees* shall not suffer their  
“ People to trade with the White Men of any  
“ other Nation but the *English*, nor permit the  
“ White Men of any other Nation to build any  
“ Forts, Cabbins, or plant Corn among them, or  
“ near to any of the *Indian* Towns, or upon the  
“ Lands

“ Lands which belong to the Great King ; and  
 “ if any such attempt shall be made, you must  
 “ acquaint the *English* Governour therewith, and  
 “ do whatever he directs, in order to maintain  
 “ and defend the Great King’s Right to the  
 “ Country of *Carolina* ; whereupon we give  
 “ Five Hundred weight of Swan Shot and Five  
 “ Hundred weight of Bullets.”

“ That if any Negro Slaves shall run away in-  
 “ to the Woods from their *English* Masters, the  
 “ *Cherokee* Indians shall endeavour to apprehend  
 “ them, and either bring them back to the Plan-  
 “ tation from whence they run away, or to the  
 “ Governour ; And for every Negro so appre-  
 “ hended and brought back, the *Indian* who  
 “ brings him shall receive a Gun and a Watch  
 “ Coat ; whereupon we give a Box of Vermili-  
 “ on, Ten thousand Gun-flints, and Six dozen  
 “ of Hatchets.”

“ That if by accidental Misfortune it should  
 “ happen, that an *Englishman* should kill an *In-  
 “ dian*, the King or Great Man of the *Cherokees*  
 “ should first complain to the *English* Govern-  
 “ our, and the Man who did it shall be punished  
 “ by the *English* Laws, as if he had killed an  
 “ *Englishman* ; and in like manner, if an *In-  
 “ dian* kills an *Englishman*, the *Indian* who did  
 “ it shall be delivered up to the Governour, and  
 “ be punished by the same *English* Law, as if he  
 “ were

“ were an *Englishman* ; whereupon we give  
 “ Twelve dozen of Spring Knives, Four dozen  
 “ of Kettles, and Ten dozen of Belts.

“ You are to understand all we have said to be  
 “ the Words of the Great King whom you have  
 “ seen, and as a Token that his Heart is open  
 “ and true to his Children and Friends the *Cher-*  
 “ *rokees*, he gives his hand in this Belt, which he  
 “ desires may be kept and shewn to all your Peo-  
 “ ple, and to their Children, and Children’s  
 “ Children, to confirm what is now spoken, and  
 “ to bind this Agreement of Peace and Friend-  
 “ ship betwixt the *English* and *Cherrokees*, as long  
 “ as the Mountains and Rivers shall last, or the  
 “ Sun shall shine ; whereupon we give this Belt  
 “ of Wampum.

“ By command of their Lordships,

*White-hall, Sept. 9,*  
 1730.

“ *Alured Popple.*

“ *OK Oukan Ulab*

“ *K Skallosken Ketagusta*

“ *T Tathtowe*

“ *C Clogoittab*

“ *K Kollanna*

“ *O Oucounacou.*

“ These are to certify *Moytoy* of *Telliquo*, that  
 “ I have seen, perused, and do approve of all the  
 “ Articles contained in the above Agreement ; to  
 “ which

“ which the *Indians* abovementioned have, by my  
 “ advice, given their consent.

“ *Alexander Cummin.*

Now follows the answer of the *Indian* Chiefs to the foregoing Articles as delivered by *Ketagusta*, September 9. 1730.

“ We are come hither from a dark mountain-  
 “ ous place, where nothing but darknes is to be  
 “ found; but are now in a Place where there is  
 “ Light.

“ There was a Person in our Country with us;  
 “ he gave us a yellow Token of warlike Honour  
 “ that is left with *Moytoy* of *Tellico*; and as  
 “ Warriours we received it: He came to us like  
 “ a Warriour from you; a Man he is; his Talk  
 “ was upright; and the Token he left preserves  
 “ his memory among us.

“ We look upon you as if the Great King  
 “ *George* was present; and we love you as repre-  
 “ senting the Great King, and shall die in the same  
 “ way of thinking.

“ The Crown of our Nation is different from  
 “ that which the Great King *George* wears, and  
 “ from that which we saw in the Tower, but to  
 “ us it is all one; and the Chain of Friendship  
 “ shall be carried to our People.

“ We look upon the Great King *George* as the  
 “ Sun, and as our Father, and upon ourselves as  
 “ his

“ his Children ; For though we are Red, and you  
 “ are White, yet our Hearts and Hands are join-  
 “ ed together.

“ When we shall have acquainted our People  
 “ with what we have seen, our Children from  
 “ generation to generation will remember it.

“ In War we shall be as one with you ; The  
 “ Great King *George's* Enemies shall be our E-  
 “ nemies ; his People and our's shall be one, and  
 “ shall die together.

“ We came hither naked and poor as the  
 “ Worm of the Earth ; but you have every thing ;  
 “ and we that have nothing must love you, and  
 “ can never break the Chain of Friendship which  
 “ is between us.

“ Here stands the Governour of *Carolina*  
 “ whom we know.

“ This small Rope which we shew you is all  
 “ we have to bind our Slaves with, and may be  
 “ broken ; but you have Iron Chains for your's :  
 “ However, if we catch your Slaves, we shall  
 “ bind them as well as we can, and deliver them  
 “ to our Friends, and have no pay for it.

“ We have looked for the Person that was  
 “ in our Country ; He is not here ; however we  
 “ must say, He talked uprightly, and we shall  
 “ never forget him.

“ Your White People may very safely build  
 “ Houses near us ; we shall hurt nothing that be-  
 “ longs

“ longs to them, for we are the Children of one  
 “ Father the Great King, and shall live and die  
 “ together.

Then laying down his Feathers upon the Table, he added ; “ This is our way of talking,  
 “ which is the same thing to us, as your Letters  
 “ in the Book are to you ; and to You, Beloved  
 “ Men, we deliver these Feathers in confirmation  
 “ of all that we have said.”

Sir ! As you are, (I believe) in the same way of reasoning with my self, I recommend the following *Quæres* to a serious consideration at your leisure hours, *viz.*

Whether these open-hearted *Indians* who could neither read nor write, have not shewn as great strength of Natural Parts, as even the Lords Commissioners have done with all their Learning and Experience in such Affairs ?

Whether it is not an Act of extraordinary grace and favour in us, To grant them the Privilege of living where they please upon their own Lands ?

Whether *Machiavel* and *Hobbs* are better Casuists, than *Scripture* and *Puffendorf* ? and

Whether the powerful and great Nation of the *Cherrokees*, by thus parting with their Independency, have not submitted to a foreign Yoak, without so much as a Gold Chain and Collar  
 neatly



neatly lined with soft Velvet in order to make it fit easy upon their necks?

That the *Indians* are both honourable and grateful is evident from the two following instances, *viz.* The *Carolina* People who trade with the neighbouring *Indians*, had run pretty far in debt to them. The *Indians* upon non-payment complained to our Governour there; and were answered, That they had no other remedy than to sue our Merchants according to *English* Common Laws. They not liking such ill treatment, flew to arms and drove all our Countrymen to take shelter under the Cannon of *Charles Town* their Metropolis, where they were obliged to make Satisfaction, and so come to an amicable agreement with the poor *Indians*. Surely *Moytoy* of *Tellico* had forgot this, when he sent Deputies to *England*: or else there might be some private reason that was not proper to be set in a publick light.

One of our *North American* Governours having with success assisted a petty *Indian* Prince upon some emergent occasion, he afterwards visited the Governour, desiring him to send his best Acknowledgments to good *Queen Ann*, and to assure her, That he would have personally waited on her, if his affairs would have given him leave, but, That however, he hoped when they were both dead, they should joyfully meet together above in

the great Room of the Gods, where they would be sure to eat Bear Bacon and smoak Tobacco eternally. Pray what *European* with his finest Parts improved by Books could have said more to the purpose? His Complements indeed might have been couched in politer terms?

To conclude: I have read most of the Histories that have been wrote about the New World, *viz. America*, and do highly blame our Forefathers (be they *English, French, Spaniards, Dutch,* or *Portugueze*) for settling Colonies there, contrary to the inclinations of the Natives: In short; King *Powhatan*, King *Oppecanough*, and other Princes who lived near *James Town* in *Virginia*, behaved gallantly enough in attempting to prevent our Countrymen from getting footing there: and though they did not succeed in so laudable an Enterprize; yet they have immortalized their Names with more real lustre than did *Alexander the Macedonian*, and other such Tyrants. The same Encomium may justly be given of all other *American* Chiefs who bravely opposed us *European* Invaders. But then, Dear Friend, it must be owned, that we Christians, who ought to imitate the meek and humble *Jesus*, do in this respect, behave full as badly if not worse than Pagans who have no Gospel Light to walk by: For enlarging their Power and Territories (at all adventures) seems to be the principal concern of most

most if not all Christian Princes, except our own most gracious Sovereign.

And farther ; I think that our blind Poet *Milton* has admirably well drawn their Character in the following Lines. See Book I I. verse 689.

*In those days Might only shall be admir'd,  
And Valour and Heroic Virtue call'd ;  
To overcome in battle and subdue  
Nations, and bring home spoil with infinite  
Manslaughter, shall be held the highest pitch  
Of humane glory, and for Glory done  
Of triumph, to be stil'd great Conquerours,  
Patrons of Mankind, Gods, and Sons of Gods ;  
Destroyers rightlier call'd, and Plagues of Men.*

This is a fair Comment upon the 4<sup>th</sup> Verse of the 6<sup>th</sup> Chapter of *Genesis*, viz. *There were Giants in the Earth in those days ; and also after that, when the Sons of God came in unto the Daughters of Men, and they bare Children to them ; the same became Mighty Men, which were of old, Men of Renown.* And indeed they are properly enough applied to these ordinary Colony-settlers, as well as to more exalted Tyrants. Nay, I am fully persuaded, That *Cæsar Borgia*, or *Olivaretto de Fermo*, would have been proper Princes over them ; especially, if they had been blessed with *Machiavel* and *Hobbs*, to serve as Secretaries of State, and Prime Ministers under them. *Cæsar*

*Borgia* was Pope *Alexander* the sixth's Natural Son; and *Olivaretto de Fermo* one of the *Ursini* Family; Usurpers and Tyrants both; but for a more ample account of them, see *Machiavel's Prince*, chapters 7<sup>th</sup> and 8<sup>th</sup>.

In a Word. Ever since the contagious Example of *Nimrod* (the ambitious Founder of the *Affyrian* Empire) the World has been pretty well stocked with Tyrants and Usurpers of all sorts, who were sent by divine Providence as a Scourge for the Irreligion and Vices of depraved Mankind, and of course are my abhorrence. Besides a multitude of other inconveniences, Despotick Power is predominant in all Republicks, which create in my heart a kind of natural aversion to their Government. So that our own mixed Monarchy is by far the most eligible State in *Europe*; and that it may be preserved as free as possible from all Filth of Corruption, till Time's latest period, is the sincere wish of,

S I R,

Your assured Friend,

W. S.

## L E T T E R IV.

S I R,

**T**Hough I am conscious to myself, that my former Letters have sufficiently trespassed upon your patience, and good nature; yet as a few fresh thoughts are come into my head, I cannot help acquainting you with them, because they tend to promote in some measure the same honest design.

1. Know then, That as soon as the Evening has shut out Day-light in that part of our Northern Hemisphere, there immediately begins a very soft and agreeable noise all over the Islands of *Nevis*, *St. Christopher's*, &c. which we suppose to be the united Voices of Snakes, Lizards, Grasshoppers, Guanias, &c. Snakes and Grasshoppers there, are much the same with our English ones in all respects. Lizards are from so small a size as three inches, to upwards of a foot long: Most of them in the lower-ground Plantations near the Sea-side, are large and of a brownish colour, like those which I have seen brought from *Guernsey* and *Jersey*: But higher up in the great Mountain, they dwindle in bulk, though they advance surprizingly in Beauty; some there, are green, others yellow (I mean of a greenish yellow)

low) some other blackish, and most if not all of them adorned with little round spots of all sorts of a most lively variegated hue ; I have seen the coal-black skin all along upon the Neck and Back of some of them, rise up into a sharp edge, and to be jagged like the teeth of a Hand-saw : and I have also with a singular pleasure viewed others of the small brown kind, whose Backs seemed as if they were wrought with the Needle, like an embroidered Waistcoat ; their Shape resembles that of a Newt, but they run very nimbly over rocks or dry ground ; their Eye is much finer than the Eye of a Toad, which they cast wistfully upon any Person who is near them ; and indeed upon my whistling softly to one at any time, I observed it to stop short though in the midst of a run, to view me wondrous attentively, with its Head held (as it were purposely) on one side, and to dip down and raise it up again with a vast seeming satisfaction as being naturally inclined to Musick, and thrusting out of its smooth Throat (at the same instant) an empty Skin resembling a transparent yellow Bag, or Purse : They are exceeding numerous, great Admirers of Mankind, very inoffensive upon all accounts, not eatable, and of course molested or hurt by no body. As for *Guanas*, I never saw above three or four during my whole five years stay at *Nevis*, they being rarely met with ; and this Rarity may in some measure

measure be occasioned by their Flesh making excellent Broth, and tasting deliciously, as I have been credily informed (for I never tasted of any myself) by several Persons of unquestioned veracity: from Nose-end to Tail-end, they were about three foot long; they are of the exact shape of a Lizard, but walk far more uprightly upon their Legs, and their Eye (if possible) transcends the Lizard's in beauty; they are also harmless to a Proverb, those I saw being tied with a soft string round the middle like Monkeys, and designed as presents to Sir *Hans Sloan*, or some other such curious Persons in *England*. I had almost forgot to tell you, That they are all over covered with scaly spots, each of which is as wide as a Silver Penny (chequer-wise) some of the deepest black, and others of the most perfect yellow imaginable. An Acquaintance told me, That they were common enough at *Bermudas*, or the *Summer Islands*, and particularly that he tasted of one at the Governour's Table when he dined with him. These I believe are what the first Voyagers called *Anolis*.

2. I had not continued above three months upon the Island of *Nevis*, before I went to live at *Bath Plain* Plantation. Our House there, stood close to the brow of a small, though very steep, Hill, on the south-side of the Plain; from whence we had a most charming prospect of that delight-

ful quarter of our Island, with *Charles* Fort and Town, which was scarce a mile beneath us to the North-ward; and our own great Mountain covered from above our Sugar Plantations almost to the top by Woods, whose Leaves never dropped off without being immediately succeeded by fresh ones, whose Top we sometimes could not see for thick Clouds a week together; the whole South-side of *St. Christopher's*, together with the Eastern, or Salt-pond Hills, the *Dutch* Islands of *Eustachia* and *Saba*, the Ships riding at anchor in *Charles* Town Road, as well as at *Basse Terre* in *Saint Christopher's*, and all the Vessels from *Europe* and *North America* that are bound to *Saint Christopher's*, *Jamaica*, *Saint Thomas* and other Islands that lay to the Leeward of *Nevis*, besides our own Trading Sloops. Nay I well remember, that when Captain *Woods Rogers* went to take possession of our present Settlement at *Providence*, and the other *Bahama* Islands (about the year 1718,) we observed his little Fleet pass by, and go (in order to wood and water) into Old Road, a Port in *Saint Christopher's*, where Sir *Chaloner Ogle's* Squadron lately rendezvoused, in their way to join Admiral *Vernon* upon the *Jamaica* Station. The Salt-pond at *Saint Christopher's* contains, I believe, upwards of fourscore Acres: The Sun in excessive hot weather exhales away all the Particles of Fresh Water, (if I may be allowed the term,) and leaves behind at



at the bottom of the Pond an incrustated Cake of Salt, exactly resembling pieces of Rock-crystal. I have once or twice known Sloops that were loaded from thence with it; but alas! we had much rather be obliged to fetch it from the Isle of *May*, at the expence of a Crown *per* Bushel, because of the want of Rain to bring on our Sugar Canes in so dry a Season.

3. There was not quite two hours difference there, between our longest and shortest Day: and I found our Evening from a little before Sun-set till quite dark, to be considerably shorter than in *England* during the Summer Season, which was (no doubt) owing to their different Latitudes, or unequal distances of *Nevis* and *England* from the Equator. However, I must own the truth, by confessing their Evening to be extremely pleasant, because of its Coolness; and the beauty of the Clouds which do then appear far more lovely to our eye, than in any other part of the Day. I frequently admire our Sky here in an Evening.

4. As soon as the Day-light was well shut in, the aforementioned very soft and agreeable noise of Snakes, Lizards, Grasshoppers, Guanas, &c. begun; but in a few minutes was most surprizingly loud above that which I heard at any other place whatever; as abounding, I suppose, with a proportional number of those Creatures. And now I begin to find, that I want Words or Terms

to exprefs my Ideas, in order to give a full and true description of this Noife : However, I fhall endeavour to exhibit as juft and candid a notion of it, as a thing that cannot be expreffed will admit of. Imagine then, that in a mild and ftill Summer's Night, inftead of the croaking of Frogs and Toads, you hear millions of the foftest melodious Notes, ftrike up almoft at once, into fo high and amazing a key, as Mufick can poffibly rife to. Thefe to my ear were all treble, though their feveral kinds were eafily diftinguifhed from each other ; and though they feemed to have no particular tune, yet they were beyond all compare, fweet and foothing. I thought they fung in Concert ; for when they were up at the higheft key, they would all of a fudden ftop together, once every minute, (perhaps to take breath) and in a moment's fpace fwell their Notes, and refume their wonted harmony as loud as before. At other times they would gradually rife and fall their Notes, in a moft enchanting manner ; and they would continue in this round of finging all night long, till day-break. When I firft heard them, they fo ravifhed my elated Soul, that I ftood motionlefs in our Yard for fome minutes ; and afterwards I left the Company, and went out fix or feven times, on purpofe to liften to their bewitching Mufick. Nay, I could not fall afleep for it, till fome hours after my getting into bed : In fhort, among  
many

many other Reflections of that kind, it brought to memory, *Adam's Answer to Eve*, when she enquired a Reason, why the Moon and glittering Stars should shine all Night long, and exhibit so glorious a sight to the Earth, when a welcome sleep had shut up all Eyes. Book 4. line 661.

*Those have their Course to finish round the Earth,  
By morrow Evening, and from land to land  
In order, though to Nations yet unborn,  
Ministring Light, prepar'd they set and rise;  
Lest total Darkneſs ſhould by Night regain  
Her old poſſeſſion, and extinguiſh Life  
In Nature and all things, which theſe ſoft Fires  
Not only enlighten, but with kindly Heat  
Of various influence foment and warm,  
Temper or nourish, or in part ſhed down  
Their Stellar Vertue on all kinds that grow  
On Earth, made hereby apter to receive  
Perfection from the Sun's more potent Ray.  
Theſe then, though unbeheld in deep of Night,  
Shine not in vain; nor think though Men were  
none,  
That Heaven would want Spectators, God want  
Praiſe;  
Millions of ſpiritual Creatures walk the Earth  
Unſeen, both when we wake, and when we ſleep:  
All theſe with ceaſeleſs Praiſe his works behold  
Both day and night: How often from the ſleep  
Of*

*Of ecchoing Hill or thicket have we heard  
 Celestial Voices to the Midnight air,  
 Sole, or responsive to each others Note,  
 Singing their great Creator : Oft in bands  
 While they keep watch, or nightly rounding walk,  
 With heavenly touch of Instrumental sounds  
 In full harmonick numbers joyn'd, their Songs  
 Divide the Night, and lift our Thoughts to  
 Heaven.*

Surely these supposed heavenly Bands of *Milton* could not afford much finer Musick than did these little Creatures. To be plain, my ravished Soul joyned most cheerfully with them every Night in ardent and repeated Allelujas to the divine, omnipotent Source of Harmony and Love. Our blessed Saviour (*Luke 12. 27.*) in addressing a vast (innumerable) multitude of People, who had thronged about him, to behold his stupendous Miracles, and to harken to his truly sublime Sermons, does aver, That even *Solomon* the Magnificent in all his Glory was not so richly arrayed as a common Lilly of the Eastern Fields. An indelible Truth; for the nicest Art is but a very faint transcript or imitation of Nature. Now in my opinion, that wise and mighty Monarch was in his highest elevation of Glory, when he dedicated his beautiful Temple upon Mount *Moriab* to the great God *Jehovah* : Nay, and I do farther,

fincerely and from the bottom of my heart, believe, that when the Trumpeters and Singers on that solemn occasion were as one, to make one Sound to be heard in praising and thanking the Lord ; and when they lifted up their Voices with the Trumpets, Cymbals, Harps, Pfalteries, Sackbuts, and other musical Instruments, in that holy exercise ; They even Then could not excell the Harmony of these little Creatures, with which I was serenaded every night. It is a saying true in a good measure, that Familiarity begets Contempt of most things ; But this I affirm upon the word of a Christian, whose Religion teaches him open-heartedness, that my Ardour and Zeal to join Voices with them in Allelujas to honour the Divine Essence, was not one single jot fallen or abated to the last moment of my stay at *Nevis* ; though perhaps several Persons by being their whole life time used to hear it, as well as for want of a right Education, were far enough from thinking it so very fine ; and perhaps too, multitudes of those who never had the opportunity of hearing it, will not credit me ; But that I do not regard ; For I ever look upon a Multitude as a many-headed Monster that is determined to believe just as it has an inclination to do : Multitudes of Scholars help to compose this Monster. In short, a Hautboy, with a Bass Viol, and two Violins, would certainly have given them much

more satisfaction ; especially if they had been blessed with a set of gay Ladies to sing and dance to the Musick, I mean a set of such Ladies as *Milton* hints at in Book 11. line 614.

*For that fair Female Troop thou sawest, that seem'd  
Of Goddesses, so blith, so smooth, so gay,  
Yet empty of all Good, wherein consists  
Woman's domestick Honour and chief Praise ;  
Bred only and compleated to the taste  
Of lustful Appetence, to sing, to dance,  
To dress, and trouble the Tongue, and role the eye.*

However, I do not much wonder at it ; for some Souls are so very low and groveling, that they have scarce any relish at all for such refined enjoyments. My worthy Friend, you should have been entertained with a clearer and far more accurate description of this extraordinary and uncommon sort of Musick, if providence had favoured me with *Milton's* sublime Genius and flowing Eloquence ; but alas ! it cannot be. I have heard from Persons who frequented the Coasts of *Malabar* and *Corromandel* in the *East-Indies*, that there is much the same Noise in the Night-time there : And I conjecture it may be the same too in the delightful Vales of *Arabia Felix*, whose sweet and charming Solitudes might probably enough furnish *Milton* with good hints in his description of *Paradise*.

5 I have so great a veneration for *Milton's Paradise Lost*, that I then got by heart *Adam and Eve's Morning Oraison* before they set out for work, and accustomed myself to repeat it with the highest rapture every Morning as a conclusion to my private Devotion. Book 5. line 152.

*These are thy glorious Works, Parent of good,  
Almighty, thine this universal Frame,  
Thus wondrous fair; thyself how wondrous then!  
Unspeakable, who sitt'st above these Heavens  
To us invisible, or dimly seen  
In these thy lowest Works, yet these declare  
Thy goodness beyond thought, and power divine.  
Speak ye, who best can tell, ye Sons of Light,  
Angels, for ye behold him, and with Songs  
And choral Symphonies, day without night,  
Circle his Throne rejoicing, Ye in Heaven.  
On Earth joyn all ye Creatures to extol  
Him first, Him last, Him midst, and without end.  
Fairest of stars, last in the train of Night,  
If better thou belong not to the dawn,  
Sure Pledge of Day that crown'st the smiling Morn  
With thy bright circlet, praise him in thy sphere  
While day arises, that sweet hour of prime.  
Thou Sun, of this great World both eye and soul,  
Acknowledge him thy Creator, sound his praise  
In thy eternal course, both when thou climb'st,  
And when high Noon hast gain'd, and when thou  
fall'st.*

*Moon,*

Moon, that now meet'st the Orient Sun, now fly'st  
 With the fixt Stars, fixt in their Orb that flies,  
 And ye Five other wandring Fires that move  
 In mystick dance not without Song, resound  
 His Praise, who out of Darknes call'd up Light:  
 Air, and ye Elements the eldest birth  
 Of Nature's Womb, that in quaternion run  
 Perpetual circle, multiform; and mix  
 And nourish all things, let your ceaseless change  
 Vary to our great Maker still new praise.  
 Ye Mists and Exhalations that now rise  
 From hill or steaming lake, dusky or grey,  
 Till the Sun paint your fleecy skirts with gold,  
 In honour to the World's great Author rise,  
 Whether to deck with Clouds the uncolour'd Skie  
 Or wet the thirsty Earth with falling Showers,  
 Rising or falling, still advance his praise.  
 His praise ye Winds that from four quarters blow,  
 Breath soft or loud; And wave your tops, ye Pines,  
 With every Plant, in sign of Worship wave.  
 Fountains, and ye that warble, as ye flow,  
 Melodious Murmurs, warbling tune his praise.  
 Joyn voices all ye living Souls, ye Birds,  
 That singing up to Heaven's Gate ascend,  
 Bear on your Wings and in your Notes his Praise.  
 Ye that in Waters Glide, and ye that walk  
 The Earth, and stately tread, or lowly creep;  
 Witness if I be silent, Morn or Eve,  
 To hill, or valley, fountain, or fresh shade

Made



*Made vocal by my Song, and taught his praise.  
Hail, universal Lord, be bounteous still  
To give us only good; and if the Night  
Have gather'd ought of Evil, or conceal'd,  
Disperse it, as now Light dispells the dark.*

*Milton*, though a most begotted Dissenter, yet did not scruple to take this fine Oraison out of the *Benedicite*, or Second Canticle in our Common Prayer Book, which was an ancient Hymn in the *Jewish* Church, and adopted into the *Christian* Worship, in publick Devotion, from the most early time. Indeed the established Church here in *England* does not accept of it for Canonical Scripture, because it is not to be found in the *Hebrew*, nor was allowed in the *Jewish* Canon, as has been observed long ago by *St. Jerom*, in his Preface before his Comment upon the book of *Daniel*. Vide *Dr. Nichols*.

6. We have no kinds of venomous Creatures to disturb us upon the Islands of *Nevis*, &c, except two, *viz.* Centipees, and Scorpions. The former are so called from their many feet: they are of a brightish hazel Colour, about as long as my little finger, flat bellied, and their back is shaped like an Arch; they move pretty nimbly, and their bite is not much worse than the stinging of a common Bee: towards the Mountain I have observed them to be longer and thicker

than in the lower Grounds : The latter, *viz.* the Scorpion is the exact shape, and indeed of the self-same colour with a Crayfish before it is boyled ; it bites according to the common opinion there, with its two large Claws that grow next to its Head, and the bite has not a more malignant effect than that of the Centipee ; they are I believe always found pretty high up in the Mountain ; for my own part, I never saw above one of them, which was scarce the length of my little Finger, wondrous slow in motion, and its Body as well as Claws very slender. *Quære*, Whether they resemble our European ones whose Sting is much worse and lies in their Tails ? The Sting of a Scorpion in *Apuglia* produces much the same Effects, as the Bite of a Tarantula ; But the Bite of a *Nevis* Scorpion does not.

7. As Physick is none of my peculiar Province, I design to leave this, and the following paragraph to be accounted for by the Physicians, and Surgeons. My Negro-man *Oxford*, had (twice I think) a slender whitish Worm that came *gradatim* (*i.e.* an inch or more every day) out of his Leg not far from the Shin bone, about half way from knee to foot. This Worm was not knotted ; for I take the knotted Worm to be a concatenation of many Worms joyned together, as it were in a link. As it came out he wound it round a very small piece of Stick, that part of it immediately

ately dying as soon as tyed fast with a piece of Silk to it. It would continue so coming out, for a yard and a half in length. His Leg swelled, and was painful enough, before the Worm had made it break out into a Sore by forcing its way thorough the Skin, but it then grew somewhat easier; however, if by rubbing his Leg against any thing, the Worm happened to break, his Leg would swell again till the remainder of the Worm appeared to come out in the self-same gradual manner quite to the end; after which the Sore soon healed up without plaistering. This is a case common enough among Negroes, though not White-men.

8. We Whites are subject to have a very small sort of Worms called Chiggoes breed insensibly in our Toes, and in the Bottoms of our Feet. In two days time or less, we perceive that they make us go a little lame, and that place looks blueish: But they are easily, and with scarce any pain, taken out of the skin by one of our skilful Negroes, by help of a Pin or Needle; and a little Tobacco Ashes put into the hole from whence they are taken, finishes a Cure. I could observe, by a carefull survey, Hairs growing upon them, here and there, when they were gotten out whole, which rarely happens: Their body is contained in a thin white bag, and both together were the size of the

smallest Pea; and after all, they are much more like a Maggot than a Worm.

9. The Centipede, and Scorpion, put me in mind of what passed in discourse between Captain *Dagget* and myself, sometime in the year 1718, upon his arrival at *Nevis*, from *Boston* in *New-England*, after a fatiguing Voyage to the *Dutch Colony* of *Surinam*. Among other Articles, my curiosity tempted me to inquire particularly after the Nature of the Cold Eel, found in their Rivers, and which is mentioned in all the accounts of that Country, especially by Mrs. *Ann Behn*, in her Novel of *Oronoko*, which is founded upon certain truth, though adorned and embellished with strange fabulous circumstances, as indeed most, if not all, rare matters of fact are. He assured me, (as others Persons of known veracity have also done) That a Cold Eel being drawn out of the River, and shook out of the Net upon a plot of Grass, the Natives and other Persons present refused to touch it, till at last a fool-hardy *European* Sailor, who it seems, was an infidel in that respect, resolved to venture taking it up, in defiance of all persuasions to the contrary. But alas! he paid dear for his want of faith; for no sooner had he grasped it in his hand, than he instantly dropped down in a swooning fit, his eyes were fixed in his head, his face turned pale, and even livid, and it was with difficulty enough  
that

that they brought him to his senses again: the best account he could give of the matter was, that the very moment wherein he grasped hold of it, the cold from it ran swiftly up his arm into his body, and pierced him to the heart, so as to deprive him of all sense. I forgot to enquire, whether this Eel is ever eaten: but perhaps it may; for the cold quality of the Eel may depart with its Life; an instance not much unlike it, falling under my cognizance every day in the *West Indies*. Our Wheaten Bread there, is made of Flower brought to us from the fine Province of *New York*, in *North America*, and is worked up with Eggs instead of Yeast or Barm. But we have another sort of Bread that is made of Cassada Root. Cassada is a Shrub of four foot high and better, grows up in a straight, tough, and brownish stalk, that is very knobby, just like an English Crab-tree bough, and close at the top, is set all around with long narrow Leaves of a deepish Green colour. The Root of it is carefully scraped till the white part appears, and then it is rubbed hard against a large Tin Grater, in shape of a Nutmeg-grater, nailed fast to a piece of Wood, that is about two foot long; and being wondrous juicy, is soon rubbed to a soft matter that resembles Children's Pap. This pappy substance is then put into a hair Bag, and pressed hard between two Stones, until there comes from it a milk

white Water of a raw unfavoury smell, and which is rank Poison; for if a Turkey, Hen, or Duck, gets to the Press and tastes the Water, it instantly dies. We afterwards lay the Cassada out abroad in the open air, on purpose that the hot Sun-beams may exhale what poisonous particles the Press could not squeeze out: We then sift it thorough a Seive, and make it into thin Cakes, baking it upon a broad Iron kept purely for that use. I was an admirer of this Bread, and do farther assure you, that it made excellent Puddings. *Woods Rogers* in his Voyage round the World, page 52. says, That at *Grande*, an Island upon the Coast of *Brazile*, in South Latitude 20 or 21, the *Portugueze* who inhabit it, have no Bread except Cassada, which they call *Farana depau*, that is to say, Bread of Wood.

10. Though this account of the Cold Eel at *Surinam* is so singular, as to make some People wholly to disbelieve it; yet it is not (as you well know) by far so wonderful as the bite of a *Tarantula* or Spider at *Otranto* in *Italy*, which has been so accurately treated of by *Baglivi*, and other learned Physicians. *Maximilian Miffon*, (vol. 4. page 59<sup>8</sup>.) gives a fine *Italian* Letter about it from Dr. *Dominico Sangenito* to Mr. *Bulifon* at *Naples*; which Letter I have prevailed upon a Friend to translate into English; and as it contains a compendious Relation of the Affair; and was never  
yet

yet published in English; I here present you with it.<sup>a</sup> “ Some time ago, Dear Mr. *Bulifon*, “ you desired me to give you a little account of “ the Tarantula, and of the Effects it produces “ in Persons bit by it: and because I am indebted to your merit, I will endeavour to satisfy “ you by the observations which I made with “ my own Eyes. The Tarantulæ are found not “ only in the Provinces of *Bari*, *Lucca* and *Otranto*, but also in that of *Capitinata*, near to “ whose Metropolis *Lucera* I was bred and “ born; it is a hot Climate, dry, and almost “ quite destitute of Trees. In the hot Summer “ days, or about that season, they are found in “ holes in the Earth; and to catch them, one “ must run a supple Wand or Stick into the “ holes, which being stirred gently makes them “ run out by the top. They are shaped much “ like a Spider, with eight Legs in two rows, “ that is, four on each side; and their Body “ (which consists of two parts joined together by “ a little knot or ligament very visibly) is of the “ bigness of a middle-sized Acorn. At one end “ of it their Mouth jets out, and out of it they “ cast their Poison in the same manner as Adders “ and Vipers do, marking the place where they “ bite, and not by stinging as some would have it.

<sup>a</sup> I am told that we have a Tarantula preserved in Spirits, at the *Musæum Ashmoleanum* in *Oxford*.

“ They are of divers Colours, for I have seen  
“ some of an Ash colour, others of a dark Brown  
“ like Fleas, and speckled as it were with little  
“ Stars; there are some in the Mountains on  
“ the Borders of *Apuglia*, but their Bite is not  
“ dangerous. A few hours after People are bit-  
“ ten by them, they make inarticulate Cries;  
“ and when any of the by-standers ask them  
“ what ails them, many return no answer, but  
“ only stare at you with a stern look; and others  
“ make signs with their hands laid on their heart:  
“ for which reason the Inhabitants of those Coun-  
“ tries, as experienced Persons, presently disco-  
“ ver their ail, and without loss of time imme-  
“ diately send for Musicians with several sorts  
“ of Instruments. Then some fall a dancing at  
“ the sound of the Gittar; others at that of the  
“ Lute or Cittern; and others at that of the  
“ Violin: when first they hear the Musick, they  
“ begin to dance softly; they ask for Swords,  
“ and although they be not skilled in fencing,  
“ yet they behave themselves as Masters. Others  
“ desire Looking-glasses, and whilst they behold  
“ themselves in them, they vent a great many  
“ bitter Sighs. They want Ribbands and Neck-  
“ laces, and fine Cloaths, which they receive  
“ with inexpressible joy, making bows, and re-  
“ turning hearty thanks to those that bestow  
“ them on them. These things they lay in a fine  
“ order



“ order about the place where they dance, making  
“ use from time to time of one or other of them,  
“ according to the impulse they receive from their  
“ Distemper. They begin their dancing an hour  
“ after Sun-rising, and end about an hour before  
“ noon-day, without ever taking any rest, un-  
“ less the Instruments grow out of tune; and  
“ then they are very uneasy till they are in tune  
“ again: It being wonderful how so rough and  
“ unpolished Persons as Husbandmen, Keepers  
“ of Cattle, and such Rusticks should become  
“ so accurate and nice in the knowledge of the  
“ Harmony or Discord of Musical Instruments;  
“ and carry their enquiry so far as to ask how  
“ much each of them cost. An hour after Noon-  
“ day they begin again to dance, and continue  
“ so doing till Sun-setting; and this they do for  
“ three days following, and in the same order  
“ without ever being tired, as I have seen many  
“ of them, nay, more than three days undergo-  
“ ing that fatigue, if they obtain no remedy by  
“ it any sooner; and some are said to have been  
“ obliged to do it eight, and others ten days suc-  
“ cessively. Whilst they dance they are not in  
“ their right senses, nor do they make any di-  
“ stinction between their Friends, Relations, or  
“ others, but all are alike to them; though it is  
“ true that they sometimes invite some comely  
“ or pretty Youth to dance with them. The

“ Cloaths

“ Cloaths they generally wear, are of the most  
“ usual colours, as flesh coloured, red, blue, and  
“ the like: but whenever they see any black,  
“ they fall in such a passion, that they run with  
“ Swords after those that wear that colour; one  
“ Person only, I have known among many,  
“ who was not displeas'd at the sight of black  
“ Cloaths, but then he did not skip about with  
“ so much vigour as the others. And now that  
“ I have given you a general description of the  
“ Tarantula, and the effects of its biting; give  
“ me leave, Dear Friend, to enlarge a little, and  
“ to relate two particular Cases, that I, with se-  
“ veral others, have actually seen in my own  
“ Country, and its Neighbourhood. One *John*  
“ *James Tesoro*, (whom I have seen dance about  
“ six times) happened one day to be in a Wood  
“ where he had business, and I believe that he  
“ was sensible that the time of his suffering for  
“ the bite of a Tarantula drew near: For he  
“ made towards his Habitation; but he dropped  
“ down by the way, and was found stretched  
“ out upon the bare ground, which being known  
“ in the Country about us, many ran thither,  
“ and I among the rest; and we found the poor  
“ Countryman oppress'd with a difficulty of  
“ breathing; and we farther observed that his  
“ face and hands began to turn black. But as we  
“ all knew his Distemper, a Gittar was brought,  
“ and

“ and as soon as he heard it played on, he first  
“ began to move his Feet, then his Legs, and  
“ afterwards he rose on his Knees : From thence  
“ a little after, he got up on his Legs and walk-  
“ ed : And lastly, in about the space of a quarter  
“ of an hour after, he jumped so that he raised  
“ himself a matter of three spans high from  
“ the ground : He sighed, but with so much  
“ violence that it frightened those that stood by ;  
“ and in less than an hour the blackness went  
“ off from his Hands, and his Face recovered  
“ its native colour. In the Castle of *La Motta*  
“ of *Montecorvino*, I had an opportunity to see  
“ five Persons, that had been bit by a Tarantula  
“ dance at the same time, and in the same place :  
“ Four of them were Ploughmen, and the other  
“ a very pretty Country Girl : In this company  
“ I observed something new, which was that each  
“ of them had taken a strange Name, and the  
“ proper Name of some ancient King ; and a-  
“ mong them they thought they were related,  
“ and so treated each other with reciprocal Af-  
“ fection, and such Complements as caused ad-  
“ miration in the beholders. They performed  
“ happily their usual course of dancing in three  
“ days ; on the last Evening of which, before  
“ they parted, they heartily desired a band of  
“ Soldiers ; upon which they had ten Musquet-  
“ teers granted them, which being divided into  
“ two

“ two Bands stood ready to give a Volley. Then  
 “ they asked afterwards for a Glass of Water  
 “ and a little powdered Salt, which were both  
 “ soon brought to them. Their Chief, I mean  
 “ the imaginary King of Kings (whose Name  
 “ was *Peter Boccomazza*) made a sign in the Cup  
 “ where the Salt and Water were, like that of  
 “ the Cross, and each of them took a little of the  
 “ said water, and made signs to the Soldiers to  
 “ fire. Then making a most profound Bow to  
 “ the Company, they said, We shall meet here  
 “ again next year : These poor Creatures after  
 “ so great a fatigue remembered nothing of what  
 “ had passed, but only begged of some of the  
 “ croud which surrounded them, for pity’s sake  
 “ to lead them home.

“ S I R,

“ I am well pleased with the satisfaction of  
 “ having obeyed your orders, in giving you this  
 “ short account of Particulars as well as I could,  
 “ though perhaps not altogether as you desired ;  
 “ If you will honour me with your Commands  
 “ in any thing else, you shall always find me  
 “ ready to serve you, and to approve myself,

“ *Yours, &c.*

The learned *Maximilian Misson*, advises those that  
 are curious to be fully informed of this affair, to  
 consult

consult chiefly Mr. *George Baglivi*, Doctor of Physick, and Anatomy Professor, in the great College at *Naples*, who ingenuously owns, like a truly able Man, that he is not capable to penetrate into these Mysteries of Nature: *Humi jacet*, saith he. But to make us amends, he gives a very agreeable relation of all the wonderful particulars of this Phenomenon (which he has often observed, even in *Apuglia*, with a perfect exactness) in his *Dissertatio de Nomine, Natura, Morju, & Effectibus Tarantulæ*: He there confirms every thing that is related by Dr. *Sangenito*, in his Letter to Mr. *Bulifon*, and adds some other Particulars to it; one of the most singular whereof is, that these Insects kill and eat one another when they meet. When you come to *Bedford*, I can help you to a sight of *Baglivi's* Treatise, if you desire it. He insists farther, *viz.* page 361, That not only their Bites, but even the Liquors in which they are stifled, are capable to produce pernicious effects, as is manifest from the experience of the Inhabitants of *Apuglia*. Nay, in chapter the first, that treats of this Insect, he avers, How those who are once bit by it, are never quite cured of the Venom; for it revives every year, and occasions a long series of Evils, which would be very annoying to the Patients, if they did not take due care of their health by Dancing and Balls. They are a hairy Animal, with two little Horns: and are so  
hostile

hostile one to another, that if you put ten of them in one Vessel, (adds he) they will kill one another, till only one survives the rest; nay, if you shut but two up in any one Vessel, the one kills and eats the other soon, though they can live above a month without Food.

11. But let us diversify the subject. You know that some of the Ancient Heathen Roman Princes were wont to burn their deceased Friends, and to preserve the sacred Ashes in small Urns, which were carefully placed in Vaults under ground. Now in order to this, they were obliged to weave large Sheets out of the Stone called *Amiantos*, that is undoubtedly the *Asbestos* so famous among Naturalists. They put the Body into one of these Sheets, which will stand the Fire with very little hurt or diminution; and when it was thoroughly reduced to ashes, they then let the Sheet cool, and so put the Ashes into Urns: (this usage is observed at this day by some Families of *Tartar* Princes.) M. *Misson* saw in Count *Moscardo's* Cabinet at *Verona* in *Italy*, many Peices of Workmanship that had been framed out of this Stone, which though hard and weighty, is notwithstanding easily divided into Fibres or Threads, which are so strong and flexible, that they may be spun like Cotton or Silk. *Vide* Vol. 1. pag. 196.

12. Several Gentlemen of known probity and credit, after having taken the tour of *Holland*,  
*Germany*

*Germany* and *Italy*, have described the affair to my entire satisfaction, and one of them with this additional and curious circumstance, *viz.* That there being a whole Sheet of this kind in one of the Pope's Palaces at *Rome* (either in that of *Monte Cavallo*, or the *Vatican*,) he with some other Travellers, had with difficulty procured the favour of seeing the Sheet tried; and accordingly a large pan of red-hot Charcoal was got ready, and one corner of the Sheet put into it; the Sheet soon looked like red-hot Iron, and continued in so fierce a Fire for a considerable space. It was then taken out, and laid to cool; and he assured me, that in half an hour's time or less, it returned to the self same colour, and felt exactly as it did just before it was put in. If I mistake not, there are divers pieces of this strange cloth in the repository of *Gresham* :

13. However, this I know to be fact. An intimate Acquaintance of mine at *Nevis*, one Mr. *Archibald Hamilton*, went for his health's sake to *Boston* the Metropolis of *New England*, and at his return back gave me a very particular account of that flourishing *Brittish* Province. Among other curious observations which he made, he told me, That at the bottom of one or more Rivers there, were considerable quantities of the Stone called *Amiantos*, He brought away five or six pieces of it, one of which about five ounces in weight he gave  
to

to me, but which I have unluckily lost some years ago. It was heavy in proportion to its bulk, extremely hard, very flat, and of a lightish Chocolate colour. The Fibres or Threads (agreeable to *Misson*) were easily enough drawn or pulled out from the narrow sides of the Stone, were almost as soft as Silk, of a whitish or rather grey colour when drawn out, and might beyond question be spun and wove into Handkerchiefs, or Cloth, especially if there was a small matter of Silk or very fine Flax mixed with it, which Silk or Flax, might be easily got out again, by putting it into a Fire for a minute space. My *Amiantos* Stone stood the Ordeal or Fiery Trial more than once, without the least hurt or diminution, that I could perceive. *Baily* says it wastes a sixteenth part. I had almost forgot to acquaint you, that the *New England Asbestos* is the entire Stone itself, whereas the *Asbestos* you shewed me in *Dr. Woodward's* Collection, is a matter (*Bailey* styles it a Mineral) that grows, as a Vein, in an extremely hard Stone. It is now above thirty years ago since I looked into *Pancirollus de Rebus Memorabilibus*, &c. so that I do not remember whether he mentions this Article, which however does most certainly merit a learned attention. The Wick of Lamps, that are falsely said to burn for Ages in Antique Roman Vaults, is supposed to be made of *Asbestos*, and the Oyl that supplies them is affirmed to be a preparation

tion



from Gold : An absolute impossibility ! For the softest Fire would by its continuation soon destroy the hardest Stone, and the purest Metal. It is well known, that the ancient *Romans* did superstitiously put into their Urns and Tombs, not only little Metallick Vessels and Glass Vials which were termed Lachrymatories, but also Sepulchral Lamps that were lighted and left there : Now, whatever strange notions vulgar Heads might conceive about them ; surely the wiser Pagans could not suppose, That either the Wick or Oyl would last for ever, because every thing that burns must of course waste.

I shall conclude my long Letter with telling you, That when Mr. *Hamilton* was in *New England*, (i. e. in 1717. or thereabouts) it was currently reported, and universally believed, that the Person who cut off King *Charles* the First's Head, died there then, he owning it upon his Death-bed, but not before.

*I am, dear Sir, Your's,*

W. S.

*P. S.* If any one doubts the Truth of Dr. *San- genito's* Letter, and cannot believe that Musick can so raise and move the Spirits of Man ; let him consider 1 *Samuel* xvi. 23. viz. *When the*

H

*Evil*

*Evil Spirit from God was upon Saul, David took his Harp and played, so that Saul was refreshed, and was well, and the Evil Spirit departed from him.* Let him consult also, chap. 8, of *Camerarius's Historical Meditations*, and the aforesaid *Maximilian Miffen*, vol. 4. page 396. where he may meet with many instances of the Power of Musick. My own Belief in all such cases, is governed by sound Reason, not at all by Prejudice: I judge of no Man's Words, before I have thoroughly tried them by the Touch-stone of this Reason. It is monstrous, in short, to imagine before-hand, that a Man is going to impose a Falshood upon me for Truth, on account of what his Neighbours may maliciously insinuate, to the impeachment of his Veracity: but alas! some people's Faith can bend like a twig: Mine, thanks to kind Heaven! never could.

## L E T T E R V.

*Good Sir,*

THE following Letter was wrote from *Naples*, to my Lord *Lovel*, by Mr. *George Shelvoock*, jun<sup>r</sup>. who was travelling Tutor to his Son; And the principal Reason for my sending it is, lest it should never be made publick, or come to your perusal by some other hand: Though I hope that one time or other, that curious Gentleman will oblige the World with a full account of his Travels.

“ My Lord,

1. “ By the only Book I have had, to consult  
 “ about what Place it may have formerly been,  
 “ which is *Ortelius’s Thesaurus*, I find it was for-  
 “ merly called *Herculeanum*, which is said to have  
 “ stood, just where this Subterraneous Town (as  
 “ they call it) now is; that is, either on the ve-  
 “ ry Spot where the Town called *Torre di Greco*  
 “ is now, or very near it, at the Foot of Mount  
 “ *Vesuvius*.

2. “ What is now seen of it, is not above half  
 “ an English Mile from hence, as I take it, and as  
 “ it was in all likelihood a large place, it may up-  
 “ on farther discovery be found, to extend itself to

“ *Torre di Greco*, and even beyond it. Before I  
 “ give such a description of these Remains as I  
 “ am able, it may first be necessary to acquaint  
 “ you, that for fear of Accidents, the Passages  
 “ they have dug out, which have been quite at  
 “ a venture, are seldom higher or broader than  
 “ is necessary for a Man of my size to pass along  
 “ conveniently. This is the cause that you have  
 “ but an imperfect View of things in general;  
 “ and as these narrow Passages are quite a Laby-  
 “ rinth, there is no guessing at whereabouts you  
 “ are, after two or three turnings.

3. “ At the further end of *Portici*, towards  
 “ *Torre di Greco*, you descend by above fifty  
 “ Stone Steps, which convey you over the Wall  
 “ of a Theater, lined with white Marble, which  
 “ if the Earth and Rubbish were cleared over it,  
 “ would, I believe, be found to be very entire:  
 “ By what is seen of it, I do not imagine it to  
 “ have been much bigger than one of our ordi-  
 “ nary Theaters in *London*, and that it was a  
 “ Theater, and not an Amphitheater, appears  
 “ by a part of the Scene which is plainly to be  
 “ distinguished; it is, I think, of Stucco, and  
 “ adorned with Compartments of Grottesque  
 “ Work, of which, and Grottesque Paintings,  
 “ there is a great deal scattered up and down, in  
 “ the several parts of the Town.

4. “ When

4. “ When you have left the Theater, you  
 “ enter into narrow Passages, where on one hand  
 “ of you, (for you seldom or ever see any particular  
 “ Object to be distinguished on each hand of you  
 “ at once, because of the narrowness of the Pas-  
 “ sages) you have Walls crufted over, or lined  
 “ with Marble sometimes, and sometimes with  
 “ Stucco, and sometimes you have Walls of bare  
 “ Brick, but almost throughout, you see above,  
 “ and about you, Pillars of Marble or Stucco  
 “ crufted or broken, or lying in all forts of di-  
 “ rections; sometimes you have plainly the out-  
 “ sides of Walls of Buildings, that have apparent-  
 “ ly fallen inwards, and sometimes the insides of  
 “ Buildings, that have apparently fallen outwards;  
 “ and sometimes you have apparently, both the  
 “ insides and outsides of Buildings, that stand up-  
 “ right, and many of them would, I dare say,  
 “ be found to be entire, as several have in part  
 “ been. To make an end of this general descrip-  
 “ tion, you have all the way, such a confusion  
 “ of Brick and Tiles, and Mortar, and Marble, in  
 “ Cornishes and Friefes, and other Members and  
 “ Ornaments, together with Stucco, and Beams,  
 “ and Rafters, and even what seem to have been  
 “ Trees, that stood in the Town, and Blocks and  
 “ Billets for Fewel, together with the Earth, and  
 “ Matter, that seems to have over-whelm’d the  
 “ Town, all so blended and crushed, and as it were

“ mixed together, that it is far easier to conceive,  
 “ than to describe it: The Ruin in general is not  
 “ to be expressed.

5. “ Having given your Lordship this general  
 “ account, I will now run over the most remark-  
 “ able particulars, I saw, just as they seem to  
 “ me, without pretending to order ; for, as I have  
 “ hinted already, it was impossible for me to know  
 “ in what order they stand, in respect to each  
 “ other. I saw the Inside of a Rotund, which  
 “ may have been a Temple ; it is crowned with  
 “ a Dome, it may be about thirty foot in  
 “ diameter, but I forbear to say any thing it  
 “ measures, for they will allow of none to be  
 “ taken near it: I saw the lower part of a Corin-  
 “ thian Column, upon the loftiest proportioned  
 “ Brick Pedestal I ever observed ; and thereabouts  
 “ some very solid Brick Buildings.

6. “ I soon afterwards passed over, what by  
 “ the length we saw of it, appears to have been  
 “ a very vast Mosaic Pavement: We soon after-  
 “ wards perceived ourselves to be got into the  
 “ inside of a Dwelling-house: The Rooms ap-  
 “ pear to have been but small ; they are lined  
 “ with Stucco, and painted with a Ground of a  
 “ deep Red, adorned with Compartments, either  
 “ of a white or light Yellow, and of some other  
 “ Colours, our Lights were not good enough to  
 “ make us distinguish: In these Compartments

“ were

“ were Grotesque Paintings, of Birds, Beasts,  
“ Masks, Festoons and the like: Soon afterwards,  
“ with some difficulty, and by creeping up a ve-  
“ ry narrow Hole of loose Earth, we got into  
“ an upper Apartment of another House: The  
“ Floor was of Stucco, and the Earth and Rub-  
“ bish was cleared away from under a great part  
“ of it: we ventured upon it, and found a Room  
“ lined and adorned in a manner I have described  
“ the last, only it was rather richer; the Ceiling  
“ is painted just in the same manner and in the  
“ same Colours, and with the same Ground of  
“ deep red as the sides. This Room may have  
“ been about ten or eleven foot high; but the  
“ danger of our situation, would not permit us  
“ to do otherwise, than get out of it as soon as  
“ we could.

7. “ Shortly afterwards, we were carried, ra-  
“ ther ascending as we went, into what seems to  
“ have been a principal Room in some great  
“ House; at the end of it, which is to be seen,  
“ there are three large Buffets in the Wall, all  
“ three most admirably painted, partly in Gro-  
“ tesque, and partly in Perspective, representing  
“ Temples, Houses, Gardens, and the like, exe-  
“ cuted with the greatest freedom, judgment, and  
“ variety, and very much enlivened with the  
“ highest and most airy Ornaments; as is the  
“ whole of the Room as far as can be seen, not

“ excepting the Roof which seems to have been  
“ a sloping one; and all the Lines of the Com-  
“ partments of the Painting of it, seem to tend  
“ to some Ornaments, that must have been in the  
“ middle, or Centre of the top: What the height  
“ of this Room may have been, is hard to say,  
“ for by the Buffets it appears, that there is a good  
“ depth to be dug out to get on the Floor. I  
“ must not omit, that between the painted Com-  
“ partments of this Room, there is continually  
“ a Palm-tree in so very picturesque a manner,  
“ that I think it one of the most pleasing Orna-  
“ ments I ever saw: What may be the length  
“ and breadth of this Room is not to be guessed  
“ at, for they have not cleared away above, I  
“ think, five foot of the end of it, that I have  
“ given an account of. We afterwards passed  
“ thorough ordinary Rooms of the same House,  
“ and through the Inside of some other Houses,  
“ seemingly of less note, of these Insides in gene-  
“ ral, I shall only say, that they are almost al-  
“ ways painted of a deep Red, sometimes plain,  
“ and sometimes adorned with Figures, and it  
“ seemed to me, twice or thrice as we passed  
“ along, that we turned the Corners of Streets;  
“ twice I thought we passed the Fronts of Houses,  
“ and once particularly we passed by the Front as  
“ it seemed of some publick Edifice, very large,  
“ with very broad fluted Pilasters of Stucco.



8. “ But nothing is more extraordinary than  
“ what is demonstratively evident to have been  
“ the Catastrophe of it. That it was partly de-  
“ stroyed by an Eruption of the Mountain can  
“ never be doubted, and in the following man-  
“ ner ; First it was set on fire by burning matter  
“ from the Mountain, and by the time it was  
“ well in Flames it was overwhelmed, and the  
“ fire was smothered : Your Lordship will be  
“ convinced of this by what I am going to ob-  
“ serve ; I have taken notice that there is every  
“ where great quantities of Beams, and Rafters,  
“ and Trees, and Billets of Wood, scattered up  
“ and down ; all these are burnt to as fine and  
“ perfect a Charcoal as ever I saw, or as any body  
“ ever made use of ; the very largest of the  
“ Beams are burnt to the Heart, though they  
“ have perfectly preserved their Form, insomuch  
“ that in all of them I examined, I could per-  
“ ceive every stroak of the Ax or Tool they  
“ were hewn and shaped with ; that the Town  
“ was burnt, is as plain as that it was overwhelm-  
“ ed. Now if it had continued to burn for any  
“ time, all the Beams and Rafters would have  
“ been reduced to Ashes, or have been quite de-  
“ faced, whereas by the Fire being suddenly  
“ smothered, they became true and perfect Char-  
“ coal as they are ; This seems to be the case of  
“ that part of it that is hitherto discovered.

9 “ That

9. " That this destruction was effected by two  
" such violent Accidents suddenly upon the back  
" of each other, may be the more natural to sup-  
" pose, than that it was burnt by the same mat-  
" ter that overwhelmed it, for if that was the  
" case, I do not see how the Paintings could have  
" been preserved so fresh as they are, or indeed  
" at all, nor can it be conceived that there should  
" not appear some marks of the burning in the  
" Bricks, the Marble, the Stucco, and the rest:  
" now there is as yet no such thing to be ob-  
" served, nor does there appear to be any sort of  
" combustible substance mixed with the Earth  
" or Rubbish; both above and below it seems  
" to have been buried in common Earth, which  
" could naturally have no share in burning the  
" Town; This may make it to be believed, it  
" was rather buried by some extraordinary ef-  
" fects of an Earthquake which happened at the  
" same time, than by burning matter thrown out  
" of the Mountain: That it was set on fire by  
" burning Matter thrown out of the Mountain,  
" cannot well be doubted; but that it was bu-  
" ried by burning matter from the Mountain,  
" appears not at all to be the case. In what-  
" soever manner the Fate of the Town was  
" brought upon it, it seems to have been as  
" dreadful an one as could have been inflicted in  
" Nature. I will trouble you with but one other  
" observation about it, which is, that the Inha-  
" bitants

“ bitants seem to have had some dismal warn-  
 “ ing to forsake it, for in the digging of above  
 “ a mile and a half which they compute the fe-  
 “ veral Windings and Turnings are, they have as  
 “ yet found but one dead Body. In my next I  
 “ will give you an account of the Paintings and  
 “ Statues they have taken for the King’s use,  
 “ and add what may have slipped out of my me-  
 “ mory at present. In the mean time, &c.”

10. None of my acquaintance who have taken the polite Tour of *Holland*, *Germany*, and *Italy*, ever so much as named this subterraneous Town to me : I have also consulted *Maximilian Misson*; and as he makes not the least mention of it, so I must presume it was not discovered till after he had published his Travels in four Octavo Volumes in the Year of our Lord 1714 : However he quotes *Dion Cassius*, and tells us from him ; That the thundering Noise of an Eruption was heard as far as *Rome*, and *Egypt* ; That the Towns of *Pompeia* and *Herculana* were swallowed up ; That most of the Inhabitants, who at that unhappy minute were assisting at the publick Spectacles were buried in their Ruins ; and that it was also then, that the ancient *Plinius* and *Cassius Bassius*, whose rash Curiosity emboldened them to advance too near the Mouth of *Vesuvius*, suffered the like fate. He is of opinion moreover, That *Herculana* stood formerly where *Torre di Ottavo* is now situate, which I suppose has not so  
 very

very lately as since the publication of his Travels, changed its name to *Torre di Greco* : And indeed as most of the Inhabitants were buried in its ruins, I do not see how this subterraneous Town can be either *Pompeia* or *Herculana*, since according to Mr. *Shelvoek's* last observation, there has been but one single dead Body dug up in it : Nay, give me leave to take notice yet farther, That as all the adjacent People of the Country resorted to these Spectacles, *Herculana* must then be crowded in a most extraordinary manner.

11. That curious and learned Traveller does also remark, That in the Night, between the nineteenth and twentieth of *September* in the Year of our Lord 1538, the Earth there was brought to bed of a Mountain, which has ever since been called *Monte Nuovo*, or *Di Cinere*. The Birth was attended with terrible circumstances : for the Earth quaked ; the Sea recoiled ; the *Lucrin* Lake was almost filled up ; great numbers of Men and Beasts perished ; and there was a general and dreadful consternation through all the neighbouring Country.

12. In another place, speaking of the *Via Flaminia*, he says : In some places, and particularly towards *Castel Nuovo*, fifteen miles from *Rome*, this ancient Pavement may be still observed, which sometimes mounts on Ascents that are now inaccessible, in other places it looses itself in  
 deep

deep Vallies, which cannot be descended into, and afterwards appears again some miles farther. It is very certain, that by Winds, Rains, great Floods, Earthquakes and other Accidents, Plains are swelled to Hills, and Hills sunk to Vallies; The Land gains from the Sea in some places, and loses in others; The Sea furnishes the Land with Lakes, and the Land renders it Islands; Rivers dry, and change their course; Mountains become level; and the figure of the Globe is in perpetual variation.

13. My dear Friend: All this I allow to be indelible truth; and particularly so in regard to *Italy* and *Sicily*, both of which Countries must be in a good measure undermined, and of course have their surface strangely altered by Earthquakes, since *Vesuvius* and *Ætna* have (in order to effect it) been burning out their Bowels for so many Ages together. This we are sure of; that both these Mountains have fallen into a raging Fit at the same time, which have induced many Persons of sound judgment and learning, to infer that they have a subterraneous communication with each other.

14. Nor is this confined solely to that part of the World; for about the year of our Lord 1718, whilst I lived at *Nevis*, the Sea did among the *Azores*, or Western Islands, gradually throw up Stones and Earth so long as till it had formed

a new Island, which was some miles in circumference. The *Portugueze* from *Tercera* took possession of it (as soon as they durst venture on so hazardous an attempt) by setting up a Cross thereon; but alas! it very shortly after sunk down again as gradually into the Sea, and so vanished. There is a Vulcano upon one of the *Azores* which is for that reason called *Fuego*; and if I am not much mistaken, there issued Smoak out of a considerable hole in the small Island, that thus arose out of, and sunk into the Sea again.

15. I must draw to a conclusion with this remarkable instance in behalf of so indelible a truth, *viz*, That about seven or eight years ago, there was such a dreadful Earthquake in *Chili* or *Peru* (or in both,) as destroyed the fine City of St. *Jago* in *Chili*, upon the River of St. *Jago*, which waters a Province of that name (and some others,) besides many Villages for some hundreds of miles together: This horrid Ruin was doubtless occasioned by the Vulcanoes with which all parts of the Coasts in the *South Sea* abound, as well as the *Cordillera*, or Mountains of *Andes*, that part the rich Kingdom of *Chili* from the vast and still more fertile Plains of *Cuio*. Father *Ovallé* a Native of *Chili* and Procurator for it at *Rome*, says, That in these Mountains there are sixteen Vulcanoes, which sometimes break out with dire effects, cleave the Rocks, and issue great quantities

ties of Fire, with a noise resembling Thunder ; He accounts these Mountains the highest in the World. *Woods Rogers* owns much the same in the following strong terms ; *viz*, “ Some parts  
 “ of them I believe are full as high, if not higher  
 “ than the *Pico Teneriff*, with Snow on the top ;” He was then cruising in South Latitude 17. 03, but does not tell what distance he might be from them ; and in another place he says, that he saw *Pico Teneriff* very plain when he was at least thirty-six Leagues from it.

16. There is a noted Vulcano near the City of *Mexico* called *Popocatepec*, whose mouth (at the top of an exceeding high Mountain) is pretty near a Mile in circumference. *Vide Dr. Barclay's Universal Traveller.*

I suppose you are by this time weary enough of reading this Epistle of

*Yours* W. S.

*P. S.* There are Vulcanoes in many parts of the *East Indies*, which frequently occasion Earthquakes and their fatal consequences, in much the same manner with *Ætna*, *Vesuvius*, and *Strombolo*.

## L E T T E R VI.

*Good Sir,*

I Would not have any one infer from my preceding Letters, and particularly from the last, that Vulcanoes are confined solely to extream hot Latitudes : no ; let us remember, that in the wonderous cold Climate of *Iceland* we have an account of a Burning Mountain called Mount *Hecla*, which (if we may give credit to the testimony of Mariners) rages most horribly as well as almost incessantly, sending forth amazing quantities of Smoke, Flame, and combustible matter. But our great misfortune is, that very few (if any) Persons of Learning and Judgment competent enough have travelled thither, to bring us an accurate description of it : And as for the poor Natives of such a dismal Country, they are so unpolished (or rather wild and savage) that they want all sorts of Literature, and consequently can relate nothing certain about its Effects beyond their own Times ; nay it is with me a question, whether any other *European* understands a single word of their Language, or whether the boldest of such ignorant Creatures durst venture to approach within a mile of its mouth. Bishop *Nicholson* in page 51. of his  
*English*



*English Historical Library* (I own) asserts their Literature in the following words ; “ *Afamal* or the “ *Asian* Tongue was supposed to be brought out “ of *Asia* by *Woden* or *Odin*, the first great General that led a Colony into these Parts. The “ best Remains of this are now amongst the In- “ habitants of *Iceland* ; who have preserved their “ ancient Language in the greatest purity ; both “ by being least acquainted with Foreign Com- “ merce, and by taking care to register in it the “ publick Transactions of their own and the “ neighbouring Nations.” Read also the two following pages of his, where you will find an account of the Treatises I never saw. His whole Book is very curious and entertaining to a sound Scholar. However, we may in time hear further of it, because about twelve or thirteen years ago the King of *Denmark* who pretends to its Sovereignty, sent off thither fifty or sixty Families, in order to try if it was not practicable to settle a Colony, that might traffick with them for Deer-skins, Bear-skins, Ermins, Martins, Beavers, and other Furs : But I doubt whether the Profit answered the Expence of the Project ; for I cannot say, that we ever after had so much as mention made of them. *N.B.* There is now at this juncture of time, a warm dispute between that Prince and the States General of the *United Provinces* of

*Holland*, in regard to the Right of Fishery upon its Coasts.

2. This Article of the Fishery upon the Coasts of *Iceland* puts me in mind, that when I was at *Kingston supra Hull*, in the year 1724, I visited for curiosity (among other Places) *Trinity House*; in the Hall whereof, hung up a very small wooden Canoe, that was (both at top and bottom) exceeding well closed, and tight. Out of a hole in the midst of the top, appeared a small man's Effigies as far almost as its middle (or waist) with a short Paddle in one hand, which Paddle was broad and flat at each end, not unlike the broad end of a well shaped Boat's Oar; only it was much sharper at each extremity and made round in the middle on purpose for him to hold it by in the middle, and to paddle with it the more commodiously. They stiled the Effigies the bonny Boatman, and in wondrous grave terms told me the following Story about him. *viz.* A *Greenland* Vessel belonging to that Port, did on her return home, about four or five days after her departure from thence, and consequently far enough from it, espy a short and little Man of that size paddling in great haste away from them; but they pursued, and soon came up with him; however he was so expert at paddling, and shifted about so very dexterously, that it was with great difficulty they caught him. He seemed very uneasy at  
at

at his misfortune of being thus made a Prisoner, fore enough against his will; for he shed many Tears crying aloud, made strange inarticulate noises, sometimes uttering what they thought might be a guttural unintelligible Language, absolutely refused all manner of sustenance both as to Meats and Drinks, which they offered him, lived two or three days, and then died in much seeming grief: His body they threw into the Sea, but brought away home with them the Canoe and the Paddle, as well as his Garment which covered all the upper part of his Body except his Hands and Face, and was of a black colour that shined like black Oyl-skin; and causing this Effigies to be made in resemblance of the bonny Boatman, put up the whole, as a most singular Rarity, in the Hall of *Trinity House*, where I saw it: I had almost forgot to acquaint you, That the Effigies had a pretty large Bag hanging at its right Side which was taken so on the bonny Boatman, and in which he kept a Liquor (said the Sailors) that would give him sufficient light whenever he dived, which he frequently did, Canoe and all together: But this I want faith to believe. In short; my own serious opinion of the matter is, That the *Greenland Ship* might be pretty near some part of the Western Coast of *Iceland*, though not able to see it for Fogs or Haziness of Weather, and that the bonny Boat-

man might be a Native of that Country, who perhaps, was drove farther than ordinary from the shore by blowing weather. The People of *Hull* are firmly persuaded that he was a Native of *Greenland*: But if I rightly remember the State of that forlorn Land, it has no other Inhabitants than White Bears, with a few Deer, and some few Fowles: I have since read M. *Egedes* account which says, it is tolerably peopled in the Parts towards the South.

3. But let us travel away to the Coast of *Norway*, where we meet with a most remarkable place called by their Writers *Mael-Stroom*, which has ever very much puzzled the Learned World to account for. It is a huge (monstrous) Hole or Hiatus in the Sea, that is situate among some poor Islands; and I shall now endeavour to describe it according to my best information and judgment.

4. This Hiatus may be a Mile in Diameter, and is very visible when the Tide is at ebb. As soon as the Water begins to flow again, the Tide drives it into the Hiatus, with an incredible impetuosity and noise, together with the Fishes and every thing else that gets into its Stream along with them, and continues to do so till it is quite full, which happens a little before the Water is risen to high Flood. It is well worth our observation; That a little before, and a little after,

as well as at high Flood, Veffels do ufually fail over it, with as much fafety as they can over any other part of the Sea thereabouts. But no fooner is the Flood a quarter fallen, than the Hiatus which is then full of Water, begins to difgorge it up again in a moft violent manner, together with the Fifhes and whatfoever elfe it had fo voraciously fwallowed down along with them. The Fifhermen from the adjacent Iflands are always, in feafonable weather, ready upon thefe Difgorgings to catch the Fifhes, which they do in confiderable numbers, retiring home with them before the Tide gets too near an Ebb, and of courfe before there can be leaft danger of its hurrying them away into the Hiatus. *Gordon* in his Geographical Grammar ftiles this Hiatus, the Navel of the World, and makes it more than a Mile in diameter, allowing Fifhes to be caught at its difgorging, and affirms, that it fwallows down every thing at high Flood, and difgorges when the Tide is at an ebb. My own account I had from perfons, who pretended to have aétually feen, and failed over it.

5. Now that this Hiatus called *Mael-Stroom* (were it fo) fhould be always a filling, could raife no fuch mighty wonder in us; but the Reafons or Grounds which caufe it to difgorge thus, do certainly lay much deeper than my fhort line of underftanding can fathom: and indeed if this

knotty Point is proposed to be unravelled, and discovered by the help of a subterraneous either Fire or Air, I think a man of penetration, and solid judgment, might easily raise such strong Objections against both, as would render it difficult to get over them.

6. This brings to my mind, That in the Spring of the year 1700, I set sail from *Yarmouth* in *Norfolk* towards *Narva* in *Livonia*, one of the finest Provinces then, on the South-side of the *Baltick*, which belonged to the Crown of *Sweden*; and the first place we touched at was *Elsinore* upon the Isle of *Zeeland* in *Denmark*, where I saw nothing remarkable, in our two days stay, besides a large Castle which they assured us, commanded the entrance into the *Baltick* Sea, and had in it one particular peice of Cannon so long and well made, that it would throw a Ball across the *Sound* into *Schonen* on the *Swedish* Side: The latter assertion may possibly be true; but about a month after we left it, a Squadron of only eighteen *English* Men of War demonstrated the former to be false, by firing each a Broad-side at it as they passed along by, to the great terrour and astonishment of its Garrison, as well as the Inhabitants of *Elsinore*. I saw a Regiment of Foot drawn up, and reviewed there; they were tall and large-bodied, and red-headed to a man, as most People of *North Germany* are, especially in the last point.

7. The

7. The next Sea Port we called in at, was *Copenhagen* their Metropolis, which notwithstanding was chiefly built with Wood. The King's Palace itself made no great figure : And to speak the truth, we saw nothing extraordinary there except its Harbour, which is the finest and most commodious in the whole World. Its Mouth is so narrow, that but one Ship can pass in at a time; And there is a foot-path made of Wood directly cross over it, which is so artfully contrived, as to be easily slipped on one side when a Vessel is to enter; Boats can row under it. When you are got in, you find the Harbour as smooth and still as a Mill-Pond, and withal capacious enough to receive the largest Navy in *Europe*; The Royal Docks, both dry and wet, are close at hand on the left at your entrance. In order to aggrandize their Country, we were told that the whole Harbour was dug by the hand of Man; but that I can scarce believe : However, this I am willing to allow them, *viz.* That it might by such labour be vastly improved, Art frequently assisting Nature in most cases of that kind, if not in all.

8. After a Week's stay, we proceeded on our Voyage for *Narva* in *Livonia*, near the Bay of *Irigria*, where we safely arrived in a few days, and with pleasant moderate Weather, considering the Season of the Year. It was a fortified and well Garrisoned Town, but not very large; being a-

about eighteen or twenty Miles from the scituation of the present famous City of *Petersburgh*. Its Buildings consisted principally of Free-stone; the Streets were pretty regular, and wide enough; and on one side of the publick Square stood a new built Burse or Exchange, that had a very handsome Front. It is upon an eminence on the South-side of a navigable River that bears the same name, having a large Castle or Citadel on the northern or opposite bank, to defend the Town in a part where the Fortifications were old and irregular; the rest of its Works were modern, and of course good. It had three Churches, *viz.* a *Sweedish*, a *High Dutch*, and an *English* one, besides another for the *Finlanders*, between the inward wall that covered the houses and one of the large Bastions near a Draw-bridge on the Western side of the Town: None of them were fine Buildings; but that belonging to the *English*, was made out of a Stable or Wood-house, and consequently by far the meanest. It had considerable Suburbs at a little distance on each side of the River; that on the South-side consisting chiefly of *Sweeds*; and that on the North-side of trading *Muscovites*, who had built a Church there for People of their Communion, which they pretend to be the true ancient Greek one: And as there was a Bridge between the Town and Castle, you may suppose there was an easy communication between them all.



all. The Town was six Miles from the River's Mouth, and as it stands upon rising, or rather pretty high ground, it makes a lovely show from the Bay of *Ingria* at the River's Mouth, where Ships ride at anchor, whilst they take in their Loading. I observed, that they had an odd kind of Vessel called *Loddy* (between a Ship and a Boat) which instead of being fastened with Iron Spikes and Wooden Trunnels (as our Ships and larger Sailing Craft are) is actually sewed, or rather tacked together with Hempen Strings; yet it Coasts along from Port to Port with safety enough. If we may credit *Salmon's* Present State of *Japan*, page 180. The People of *Jesso* frequently come over to the North part of *Japan* to trade in Vessels sewed together with Cordage, without any Iron-work about them: This is easily practicable, it being but ten Leagues between the two Countries. There are some Villages all around it, that would look pleasantly were not the Houses made of Firr-trees badly squared, and laid upon each other (by way of a Wall) and so joynted together at the ends: I thought them at first sight strange and ugly sorts of Buildings; but they are very warm in Winter, by the help of good Stoves. They had exceeding fine Wheat, Rye, and other Grain, though the Peasant's (and common People's even in Towns) Bread is as black as my hat; but the only Fruits I remember

ber to have seen among them, were common Cherries and ordinary Apples. They boasted that the Steeple of the *High Dutch* Church was covered with Sheets of Silver, instead of Lead; but that could not be true, as Money was not so very plentiful among them: However it was crufted over with thin Sheets of a mixed sort of Metal, that cast a dazzling lustre when the Sun shone out full upon it, which puts me in mind of *Milton*, book 3. line 543.

————— *As when a Scout*

*Through dark and desert ways with peril gone  
All night; at last by break of chearful dawn  
Obtains the Brow of some high-climbing Hill,  
Which to his eye discovers unaware  
The goodly prospect of some foreign Land  
First seen, or some renown'd Metropolis  
With glistening Spires and Pinnacles adorn'd,  
Which now the rising Sun gilds with his Beams.*

The People were generally speaking poor and good-natured, though hot-headed and cholerick like our *Welchmen*. The Country every where (except Corn-fields and a few Pasture Grounds) was overrun with thick Woods of Pine, Firr, Juniper, &c; but their green huc looked melancholly at best, and no ways, to be compared with the lively Colour of our *English* Tree Leaves. They had some few Oaks, here and there, of the

the *Norway* kind: but their Ships were all built (as well as their Houfes) of Firr or Pine. To their credit, I never heard of a Law-fuit, or a Thief among them, during the whole Summer I lived there; and it was very rare for any of them to be feen disguised with Spirituous Liquors, except on *Sundays*, and then it was chiefly with mean Peafants, who had no other Holiday in the Week. Their beft Drink is Ale, which is reckoned pretty good. Their Weddings were always folemnized on the *Sunday*, whose whole Afternoon was fpent in Mirth and Jollity. And it was customary with the poorer fort, to invite many to their Weddings; which Custom I much approve of, for none ever went to them empty handed. At *Nevis* it is customary among the richer fort of *Jews*, for the neareft Relations to make very handfome Prefents to the Bride. Bawdy-houfes were publick enough among them, but were chiefly reforted to by our Englifh Sailors. Their Men and Women both were homely in Perfon, if compared with us Englifh.

9. I was credibly informed by our Countrymen, who lived there; That in Winter-time their Rivers and Lakes are immediately (that is to fay, in a fingle night) froze over, to a great thicknefs; and the Snow ufually falling in vaft quantities upon the Ice, and in a good meafure freezing as it falls, it will in two or three days time become fo  
extream

extream hard, as to bear any weight whatever. Their way of travelling from Town to Town is, in Sledges, that are well lined with Bear-skin, and other Furrs. They wear Furr Waistcoats, and wrap themselves up in other warm Garments, having thick Furr Gloves, and a Woollen Cap, which covers their whole Head and Neck, leaving only peep-holes for their Eyes, a Case for the Nose, and a breathing-hole for their Mouths. Thus equipped, they get into the Sledges, each person carrying a Gun, ready charged, in order to keep off Bears and Wolves, with which their Forests abound: And then a light-heeled *Finlander* runs on foot, and leads the Horse, who draws the Sledge, at a swift rate; they for the most part travelling upon Rivers, because the Snow or Ice is there, much the levellest and most even. The Bears and Wolves do not care to attack Men, unless Hunger drives them to it, in excessive cold and severe Weather: And as there go five or six Sledges together in company, so they apprehend little or no danger, because the discharge of a Fire-Arm or two, will quickly oblige those ravenous Creatures to scour back again to the Woods. I saw several Storks there, which refutes the vulgar notion, *viz.* That they are no where to be found but in a Republick: In *Holland*, they are vastly numerous, I suppose, because they there meet with most plenty of Food, and greatest en-

couragement. It is reckoned there lucky for those whose Chimnies they build Nests on. In *Sweden* they build Nests on Pine-trees, which put me in mind of the *Pfalmist*, Pfalm civ. 17. viz. *As for the Stork, the Firr-trees are her House.* Storks are of the Heron kind, and ——— *Heron*, Esq. of *Cressy*, in *Lincolnshire*, kept some years ago a Heronry, as many Gentlemen do Rookeries.

10. The People in general, are strictly religious in their way, as appears by the following instance, to which I was a weekly Eye-witness. Such of them as dwell in a small Town or two at the River's Mouth, go very early every *Monday* Morning, during the Summer-season, to a remarkable place, called by them the *Fall*, where they work all the week till *Saturday* Evening; at which time they walk back home, to their Habitations, every now and then singing most devoutly a Psalm or Hymn, in honour to the World's great Author and Supporter. They sung slowly, and I thought their Voices sweet and harmonious. I have with singular pleasure seen two or three hundred Men, Women, and such children as were able to work there, all marching together in this solemn manner, by the River's side.

11. I shall now describe this Fall or Cataract, (which very few Authors who mention the Country, take much notice of) in the plainest and easiest

easiest method my memory, and poor genius will admit of. The River of *Narva* issues out of a very large Lake, called *Peipus*, and about three miles before it reaches the Town, throws itself most furiously down a vast rocky Precipice, that is at least an hundred foot high. For some distance before it arrives at the Precipice, the Ground has a small slope or gradual descent, which adds a considerable Velocity to the natural and level Stream of it, and of course, causes it to rush down with incredible violence; the Noise it makes being loudly heard at *Narva*, when the Wind fits fair, to carry it thitherwards. The Rock does not rise directly in a perpendicular line, but it rather hangs over at the top, which gives the Water a cast of thirty yards distance, at the least, from the place where we can walk under it. When I first paid a visit to this noble Sheet of Water, it made such a strange unaccountable din (like the supposed *Catadupæ* of *Nile*) that I thought it would have broke the Tympanum of my Ear: And you will readily believe it must do so, when it alights from above, among a heap of Rocks, that splits it as small as dust, and causes it to mount up into the Air again. As the Sun then shone out brightly, I thought it one of the finest shows in Nature: And surely it was so; for the Reflection of its gay and glorious Beams, upon this noble Sheet and Dust of Water, darted all  
around

around such beautiful Lights, and Colours, and Rainbows, as are much easier imagined than expressed by my poor Pen. *Purchas*, in his Relation of the two *Holstein* Embassador's Travels into *Persia*, by way of *Narva*, gives much the same account of it. And perhaps you may judge that it does, in a good measure, resemble the famous Cascade of *Terni* in *Italy*, though it does not fall from so high a Precipice; vid. *Misson*, vol. 2. pag. 363. whose words are as follow, *viz.*

“ The River *Velino* throws itself down from a  
 “ steep Rock, three hundred foot high, and falls  
 “ into the Cavity of another Rock, against which  
 “ the Water dashes with such violence, that it  
 “ rises like a Cloud of Water-dust, perhaps double  
 “ the height of the Fall; and causes a perpetual  
 “ Rain in all the adjacent Parts. This pulverized  
 “ Water forms, with the Sun, an infinite num-  
 “ ber of Rain-bows, which encrease and diminish,  
 “ cross one another, and dance about according  
 “ to the various rebounding and spurting up of  
 “ the Water; and as this watry Smoak is thicker  
 “ or thinner. While they are still in the Air, they  
 “ break, foam, dash against, encounter, and shock  
 “ each other, and seem to be entangled together.”

The Author here, you say, must be mistaken, for it contradicts Sir *Isaac Newton's* Theory of Colours: Sir *Isaac Newton* is not infallible. The Reason why the Water-dust at *Narva* is less, and rises

rises not so high as its own Precipice is ; That its Precipice is not much above one third so high as that of *Terni*, and that instead of falling upon a single Rock, it alights among a multitude of them, which all help to break its force.

12. But alas ! What are these paltry Cataracts, if we compare them with that amazing one upon the broad River of *Niagara*, which waters the *French Town* of *Quebec*, in *North America* ; a Place attempted to be taken, both by King *William* and Queen *Ann*, in their Wars with *France*, but in vain. The Fall there, measures six hundred foot ; and the monstrous Sheet of Water, has made at the bottom Canal, (which receives it into its bosom) so deep a Cavity, and runs for six or seven Miles together, with such a fierce impetuosity, as must surprize with horror, all Spectators, who have courage enough to look down into it. But I cannot term it such a great wonder, considering the largeness of that Body of Water, and the great heighth a Man is at above the Canal, which the River throws itself into, when he views it near the top of the Hill, from whence the Water falls. I remember, that Father *Hennepin*, (a *French Missionary*, among the *Canada Indians*, bordering upon its Banks) gives us a singular description of this famous Cascade ; and Dr. *Barclay* mentions it in his *Universal Traveller*.



13. Let us now return, in order to take leave of *Narva*, which at present, (with all the rest of *Livonia*, that was then looked upon by all *Europe*, as one of the fairest Jewels belonging to the *Swedish* Crown) is in actual possession of the Empress of *Russia*, being conquered by the Czar *Peter* the Great, quickly after his success at the memorable Battle of *Pultowa*. I continued there with pleasure the whole Summer, till the near approach of his Army, which being within a Day's March of us, obliged all *Englishmen* to hasten down the River on board our Ships, that rode in the open Bay of *Ingria*, where we found every thing in a readiness for our departure. Next Morning about Sun-rising we weighed Anchor, and had not been under sail an hour, before we observed the Suburbs at *Narva* to send up a prodigious Smoak, which was occasioned by setting them on fire, the Governour having previously determined so to do, as soon as their Enemies came in sight. The Town of *Gam*, a day's distance from *Narva*, was taken by Storm, and the *Muscovites* put all to the Sword, viz. Men, Women, and Children. The Corn and Cattle in the adjacent Country, were either brought into the Town, or sent off towards *Revel*; after which the remainder was pillaged and burnt by the *Swedish* Maroders, in order to distress the *Muscovites*, for want of Forage and Provisions. In

short, the Villages all around were in a flame, and the Streets of *Narva* were filled with Country Women, who fate under the Eves of Houses crying, with their Children and Household Goods by them, their Husbands and Brothers being all in Arms, pursuant to the King's Placart, which was fixed up in the Market-place. Our Ship carried off about an hundred of these Women and Children, with their Beds, Pots, Spits, &c. landing them at *Revel*: And one of our Sailors married one of these Women there, though he had never seen her before she came on board us, and was to stay but two or three days with her after Marriage; he was either a *Dutchman* or *Lubecker*. I never reflect upon this dismal (horrid) scene, without calling to mind *Milton*, Book II. line 638.

*He look'd, and saw wide Territory spread  
 Before him, Towns and Rural Works between.  
 Cities of Men with lofty Gates and Tow'rs,  
 Concourse in Arms, fierce Faces threat'ning War,  
 Giants of mighty Bone and bold Emprize;  
 Part wield their Arms, part curb the foaming  
 Steed*

*Single or in Array of Battle rang'd,  
 Both Horse and Foot, nor idly must'ring stood;  
 One way a Band select from Forage drives  
 A herd of Beeves, fair Oxen and fair Kine*

*From*

*From a fat Meadow ground; or fleecy Flock,  
Ewes and their bleating Lambs, over the plain  
Their booty; scarce with life the Shepherds fly,  
But call in aid, which makes a bloody fray,  
With cruel tournament the Squadrons joyn;  
Where Cattle pastur'd late, now scatter'd lyes  
With Carcasses and Arms the ensanguin'd Field  
Deserted: Others to a City strong  
Lay siege, encamp'd; by Battery, Scale, and Mine,  
Assaulting; others from the Wall defend  
With Dart and jav'lin, Stones, and sulph'rous  
Fire;*

*On each hand slaughter and gigantick deeds.  
In other part the scepter'd Heralds call  
To council in the City Gates: Anon  
Grey-headed Men and grave, with Warriours  
mix'd,  
Assemble, and Harangues are heard, but soon  
In factious opposition, till at last  
Of middle age one rising, eminent  
In wise deport, spake much of Right and Wrong,  
Of Justice, of Religion, Truth and Peace,  
And Judgment from above: Him old and young  
Exploded, and had seiz'd with violent hands  
Had not a Cloud descending snatch'd him thence  
Unseen amid the throng; so violence  
Proceeded, and Oppression, and Sword Law  
Through all the Plain, and refuge none was  
found.*

14. We got safe the next day to *Revel*, (formerly a *Hanse Town*,) another Port on the same side of the *Baltick* Sea, and found it considerably larger than *Narva*. It was then full of Soldiers, and the young King of *Sweden*'s Royal Standard was most pompously displayed in the Market-place; they being in weekly expectation of his Person, and General Officers, with Forces numerous enough to raise the Siege of *Narva*: And indeed the event did soon after make it appear, that their Hopes, though very sanguine, were yet well grounded; For the Vant-guard of his Army alone, beat the whole *Muscovite* one, killing and taking Prisoners, most of the Generals, inferior Officers, and common Soldiers too.

15. *Revel* Port was very little better than an ordinary open Bay then: But I have been informed, that after it fell into the hands of the Czar *Peter* the Great, he fixed a Wooden Pier upon a Sand-bank in the Sea, that would render the Harbour safe by breaking the Waves. This Pier consisted of the longest and largest Pine-trees joined together in the strongest manner, and was so contrived, that if any part of the Work failed, the defect might be amended without much damage to the rest. The Sea there freezes violently a good way from the Shore; and as soon as the Ice was thick enough (i. e. when it was froze to the bottom) it was set up and joined well together

ther upon the Ice, where it stood erect all Winter; and there coming on a gradual thaw next Spring, the whole Fabrick sunk as gradually down, with little or no detriment. The Sea is there frozen as far as Eye can reach.

16. I consulted the Author of the Life of *Peter* the Great, about this Pier, who does not so much as once mention it; neither does Captain *Perry*, though he was so long Engineer to him, and of course must have a hand in his great Projects of this kind: However, the latter gives us an account of the Building of *Cronslot* Castle, near *Petersburgh*, which was founded in much the same manner, *viz.* It stands on a Sand-bank in the midst of the Sea, about a Cannon-shot from the Island of *Retufari*, and a mile from the Coast of *Ingria*; The Foundation of it was laid in Winter, upon the Ice, with Boxes made of strong Timber, and filled with Stone, on which the rest was afterwards built with Timber filled up with Earth. This Castle is round, with three Galleries about it, above each other, and well furnished with Cannon.

17. We did not stay above two or three days at *Revel*, before we set sail on our return to *Copenhagen*, where we saw an *English* Man of War riding at Anchor before the Mouth of the fine Harbour, on purpose to see the *Danish* Fleet unrigged and laid up for the year: She was one of the

eighteen mentioned in paragraph the sixth, and who were commissioned by King *William*, to prevent the *Danes* from attacking *Sweden* at so favourable a juncture, as when *Livonia* was invaded by the *Muscovite*. I could wish heartily, that the same care had been taken since, to stop the Progress of the *Russian* Arms: For though their present Empress is in strict Alliance with us; yet I dread the consequences of their future Power. We did not touch again at *Elfsinore*, but continued our Voyage without stopping, till we cast Anchor in *Yarmouth* Road.

18. *N. B.* The Straits between *Schonen* and *Denmark* are froze over every Winter, and a great singularity of the *Baltick* Sea, as well as of the *Mediterranean*, is, That there is very little if any Tide at all in it: And as the Water is not disturbed and muddied thereby, so you may distinctly see a Stone which is no bigger than my Head lay at the bottom, in six or seven fathom of Water. Give me leave to add, That there is the self same transparency in the Sea, between *Nevis* and the *Salt-pond* Hills in *Saint Christopher's*, where the Tides are scarce perceptible; and farther still, that it is matter of wonder to me, that the *Adriatick* Sea should have very regular Tides, when the *Mediterranean* has none, according to the common opinion, which opinion I think justly questionable.

*Good Sir,*

19. As I was very young in 1700, so the whole Voyage made such a strong impression upon my Mind, as time never can erase; and I very well remember too, that after I was at *Oxford*, I used (as often as I had opportunity) with the highest gratification to myself, to talk over the affair with my Father, Captain *Kirkman* and others, who were at *Narva* both then and since. It was my custom always to keep Books of Remarks; the two first Volumes whereof containing, *Gibson's* Notes upon *Drummond's* Poem, entituled, *Polemio-Middinia*, Mr. *Andrew Bruce's* upon the same, which were never printed; my own Tract upon Government, that was chiefly levelled at *Machiavel*, *Hobbs*, and *Milton*, &c. &c. I burnt many years ago; and as for the third Volume, in which were my Notes or Explanation of *Falconer's Cryptomenisis Patefacta*, that is to say, his Treatise upon the Art of Decyphering; Anecdotes upon the *West Indies*, and Observations on the Reigns of King *William*, Queen *Ann*, and King *George* the First; that too was last week committed to the flames, in order to prevent the itch of writing such Letters as these, from farther spreading upon the mind of

*Your Friend, W. S.*

*Postscript.* I once saw a Sea-Horse, that an acquaintance of mine pick'd up on the Shore, not far from *Naples*: It was about six inches long, and exactly answered *Maximilian Misson's* description, *viz.* "It soon grows dry, and is easily preserved without farther trouble; it is certain, it hath something of the Head and Neck of a Horse; it is said, the Female hath no Hair on it's Neck; this Hair falls off as the Animal dries." I observed that it had nothing which resembled Legs, but in all other respects was the self-same with other Fishes, being, however, as it were jointed in the middle, and hinder parts especially, in such a manner as I am not able to describe.



## L E T T E R VII.

*Good Sir,*

**I** Often reflect with the highest satisfaction, upon our agreeable entertainment over Dr. *Woodward's* Collection of Fossils, at your University, last Summer, and shall be ready at all times, not only to acknowledge myself very much indebted to you for it, but likewise to contribute, as far as I am able, towards enlarging the Collection, as well as to give you now and then a few serious Thoughts upon the subject.

2. And having some leisure time, which would be worse spent this week, I shall, pursuant to my design, take leave to acquaint you; that as I was walking the other day in our Garden, I happened to pick up a small common Stone of an odd shape, which immediately put me upon considering, the Nature of Stones in general; and this consideration led me to the following conclusive Points, *viz.* 1. That Stones naturally grow. 2. That it is often a difficult task to assign reasons for their several Kinds, Colours, strange Shapes, and beautiful Impressions. 3. That there may be such things as Petrifications. and 4. That it is even possible for us to invent artificial Stones, which will be very durable.

3. That

3. That Stones naturally grow, is, I think, evident enough, because divers things have been found in the middle of them, that without such a growth, could never have come there. Many Authors of undoubted Credit might be brought to prove the assertion: But I shall content myself with mentioning *Maximilian Miffon* only; whose testimony I propose to back, with a few Instances and Observations, that have fallen under my own cognizance.

4. That judicious *Huguenot*, in volume the third and page 67 of his book, entituled, *A New Voyage to Italy*, quotes *Tassoni*, and tells us from him, That some Labourers being employed to dig Stone at *Tivoli*, near to *Rome*, and having cleft a great Mass, found in the middle of it an empty space, in which there was a living Crayfish, that weighed four Pounds, which they boiled and eat. Other Authors assure us; That a wrought Diamond was taken out of the heart of a great piece of Marble; that a considerable quantity of Sweet Oyl was found in another like piece of Marble; and that a living Worm came out of the middle of a Flint: But, says he, before I employed my time in reasoning upon such sort of Facts, I would be sure of the Truth of them, by undoubted Proof.

5. Without making any other Remarks on this passage of *M. Miffon*, who seems strongly  
to

to suspect their Truth; I must inform you, That besides that in Dr. *Woodward's* Collection, I have seen divers Pieces of Grey Marble, which were brought from *America*, wherein were slender and short Veins, as well as little Drops, of pure Gold, about the size of a large Pin's Head, which I am satisfied could never have been hid there, except the Marble had actually grown round about them. Nay, I make no manner of question, but that Gold, Silver, and other Metals, and Minerals too, of all sorts, do naturally grow, though we short-sighted Mortals have no certain Criterion, whereby we may discover, how fast, or slow, such growth is. Bishop *Burnet*, in his Letters, (page 114.) says, that he saw in the Cabinet of the *Cannione Settala*, which was then in his Brother's hands, a lump of Ore, in which there is both Gold and Silver, and Emeralds and Diamonds: It was brought from *Peru*, in *South America*.

6. But to come closer yet to the subject in hand, I went in the year 1722 from *Burgh*, in *Lincolnshire*, to *Yarmouth*, in *Norfolk*, the place of my birth, on purpose to visit what was worthy of Observation there, and particularly the large Church, Chapel, Market-place, Hospitals, Draw-bridge, Haven, and Key; upon the last of which, and not far from the fine Draw-bridge, the Corporation had, a few years before, built a very handsome and commodious House of Entertainment,

ment, to rejoice in upon all occasions of publick Festivity. Now, as two Men were at work, sawing through a *Portland* Stone, of three foot in diameter, to use it in some part of the Building, they found in the center of it a great live Toad, which died within five or six minutes after it became exposed to the open Air; and what caused the greatest wonder of all was, That in the Cavity of the Stone, where it was lodged, it had very little more room, than would barely serve it to turn round in.

7. People flocked thither, from all quarters of the Town, out of an uncommon curiosity, to be Eye-witnesses of so singular and rare a spectacle, both before and after its death; admiring how it could possibly get into the Heart of such a solid Stone, or how it could live there, without either Meat, or Drink, or even open Air to breath in. And indeed I must fairly own, That I perceive but two ways to solve their scruples; *viz.* first, by Toad-spawn, or else by some very small young Toads being dropped into a Hole, that went down a foot and a half deep into the Earth, which Soil being of a quick petrifying nature, turned almost immediately into Stone, and so shut up the Toad a close prisoner; or else, secondly, That the Spawn, or very small young Toad was accidentally dropped (or washed by Rain) into a Cleft, between two Stones, that were almost

almost close together, at the surface of the ground, and that soon, by the washing in of Sand or Gravel, grew till they met and made but one single Stone, leaving the Toad a scanty cavity to inhabit. I am not inclinable to give in to the former method of Solution, because I cannot believe that Stones do ordinarily grow fast enough, to answer the End proposed. And if I allow the latter to be true, I foresee a sturdy Objection, that may be raised against my opinion, *viz.* How did it subsist with life there, in want of Food, Drink, and open Air? Now the best answer, at present, occurring to me is; That dropping in between the two Stones, so wondrous small and young, or perchance in Spawn, even before it had life, a very little fresh Air might, and doubtless did at first, suffice for it; and as that Air became less and less, by slow degrees, so it likewise became by such degrees habitual to the nature of the Creature, to breath well enough in such a pent-up place. And I may moreover rationally suppose, that it could there, very well preserve life, by sucking of the moist Stone itself, which also became full as useful Food as Grass, Fruits, &c. are to Toads, in our common open Air. *N.B.* That these Creatures bury themselves pretty deep in the Earth, all Winter long.

8. At my return into the South-Marish of *Lincolnshire*, the Place of my residence then, I  
talked

talked over this affair with a neighbouring Clergyman, who had lived many years upon the *Woulds*: He readily assented to the latter Solution, and assured me, that he himself, had now and then met with live Toads in the Sand-stone, which grows on those *Woulds*: But indeed I did not look upon that as so strange a thing; for their Sand-stone is some of it so soft and porous, that it scarce deserves the name of Stone.

9. But farther; Though I might quote Naturalists, who allow, that Stone grows a-pace about *Oxford*, yet I shall rest myself contented with exhibiting one clear Instance, that fell under my own cognizance, in regard to it; *viz.* That when *Queen's-College*, in *Oxford*, (of which I was a Member) was about raising that Wing, which reaches from the Library to *High-Street*, the Labourers in digging down, met with a springy place, of five or six yards long in one spot, where the Foundation was to be laid, about three or four yards below the surface of the ground; upon which Mr. *Townsend*, the Architect, ordered, Heart-of-Oak Piles, as thick as one's thigh, to be rammed down, and set close together, (as they do Elm Piles at *Amsterdam*, and indeed all other parts almost in *Holland*, on such occasions) on purpose to secure the Foundation there. I asked him, whether it would not have answered his end better, to have arched those

those Springs over? And he replied, That those Oak Piles, would not decay under a hundred years, long before which period of time, all the Foundation-wall, would be grown into one continued Stone, just like our Provost's Garden-wall, that adjoined to the Library, which had just then been dug up, to make room for that new Building: Nay I must own, how all that part of the Garden-wall, which was under Ground, was turned into one single Stone, of at least twenty yards in length, and was much harder to be broke, than any Free-stone used in the Building. I do not trouble myself to enquire, whether this growth was effected by Effluviæ, or Heats, or Colds, or Spar or Salts, &c. Upon all the Sea-shores I have been at, I found several small Stones cemented together, or grown into one large one: and I must farther observe, that in the Kingdom of *Chili*, a River called *Mendoca*, has a natural Bridge of Rock over it, from the Vault of which hang several pieces of Stone, resembling Salt, that congeal like Icicles, (as the Water drops from the Rock) and are formed into several Shapes and Colours. Besides; we know too well, that Stones grow pretty fast in the Kidney and Bladder of Human Bodies, not excepting those of young Children: They are many small ones, as it were, cemented together in one Mass. Besides, you find

find ſuch Maſſes of Stone, in moſt, if not all Stony Counties in *England*.

10. I ſhall conclude this firſt Article, by reminding you; That in Paragraph the tenth, of my firſt Letter, I make mention of the bottom or root end, of two ſmall Buſhes, which I ſent along with my Shells, to Dr. *Woodward's* Collection; That the Roots of them are ſo firmly fixed, in hard ſolid Stone, as to ſeem all of a piece with them; and that they muſt have grown in the Sea, becauſe the Land Soil there, produces none ſuch. My own Conjecture of them is; That either the Stone muſt have been much ſofter, when the Plant firſt took root in it; or elſe, that the Gravel, Slime, &c. muſt not long after gather about the tender Roots, till it grew into Stone.

11. But Secondly; Though the World might be ever ſo ſufficiently convinced, that Stones naturally grow; yet it is often a difficult taſk, to aſſign Reaſons for their ſeveral Kinds, Colours, ſtrange Shapes, and beautiful Impreſſions. *Maximilian Miſſon*, vol. 1. page 170. ſaw in the Emperor's Cabinet, at *Amras*, in the County of *Tirol*, Stones repreſenting Trees, Fruits, Shells, and Animals, all which were the pure Work of Nature. And again, vol. 3. page 292. he takes particular notice of Stones, that are found on the Mountains, about twelve miles diſtant from *Florence*, at *Limago*; which being ſawed through  
the



the middle, and afterwards polished, some of them represent several sorts of Trees, and others are marked with the Figures of ruined Castles and Towns: *Kircher*, adds he, calls the former *Dendrites*, from the Images of Trees, that appear on them. They are a sort of Agate, but how they come to have a full grown Tree, marked in Miniature upon them, is not so easily accounted for. *N. B.* We have many of these Stones termed *Dendrites*, ready polished, to be sold at *Willey's*, and some other Toy-shops in *London*.

12. In a Room at one end of *St. John's-College*, in *Oxford*, I was shewed, (among Skeletons, Birds of Paradise, Pictures, in a wonderful small Hand Writing, of *Gustavus Adolphus*, of *Sweden*, and our King *Charles* the First, and other curiosities) at least, forty Stones that were considerably large, of a greenish brown colour, and which were taken out of the paunch of an Ox, which was killed at that City. Two or three of them were almost as big as a Goose Egg, and I could perceive the plain (undoubted) Marks of Piles, or Leaves of Grass, upon them, each Mark being about two inches long: An evident proof, I thought, not only for their growing whilst in the Ox's Belly, but likewise for their great softness then, without which quality, I could not conceive them capable of receiving those impressions.

13. Besides, a Stone with a representation of a small headless Snake upon it, which I do not pretend to account for, though I think you call it *Cornu Ammonis*, together with a piece of petrified Moss, both given me by a *Yorkshire* Gentleman ; I sent to Dr. *Woodward's* Collection some other Stones, that are in shape of the hollow Shells of Oysters, (It is somewhat remarkable that I never met with above one like the flat side of an Oyster) and indeed do so very nearly resemble them, that you will perhaps insist upon their being Petrifications, and that about ten days before *Noah's* Flood, they contained excellent Fish in them ; but that very unfortunately, in that great jumble and blending of Rocks, Earth, Sea, Rivers, Sand, &c. all in confusion together, the poor Oysters perished, and their Shell (in company with an innumerable Heap of other Matters) petrified, and remained in that very state till I (walking out to take the Air,) picked them up in a Gravel-pit, near *Bedford*. I cannot give in to that opinion, and could enlarge copiously upon so fertile a Topick ; but as *M. Misson* speaks my sincere thoughts, in better terms than I am master of, vol. 3. page 251. I shall refer you to that passage, as follows.

14. “ I observed, near *Certaldo*, (in *Italy*) according to the advertisement you gave me, several Hills of Sand, stuffed with divers sorts of  
“ Shells.

“ Shells. *Monte Mario*, a mile from *Rome*, is  
 “ also full of such things; besides; I have found  
 “ some of them on the *Alps*, at *Lissy* in *France*,  
 “ and elsewhere. *Olearius*, *Steno*, *Cambden*, *Speed*,  
 “ and many other Authors, both ancient and mo-  
 “ dern, have taken notice of this Phænomenon;  
 “ and I read with pleasure, the Dissertation you  
 “ sent me on this Subject: Yet since you desire  
 “ me to deal plainly with you, I must tell  
 “ you, that I am not of your opinion, as to the  
 “ main.

15. “ If these Shells were the product and re-  
 “ mainder of the Deluge, I would willingly be  
 “ informed, why it did not rather leave them, in  
 “ deep Bottoms and Vallies, than throw up whole  
 “ Mountains of them; and also, why they are  
 “ so rarely found; for, it seems more agreable to  
 “ reason, that they should have been scattered  
 “ more universally upon the face of the Earth, and  
 “ not gathered into Heaps, as the few that are left  
 “ are always found. It is not impossible, that  
 “ these Shells might be preserved ever since the  
 “ Deluge, and therefore I will not insist on that  
 “ difficulty; but give me leave to tell you, that  
 “ you seem to have a false notion of the Waters of  
 “ the Deluge: For, to give a reason why those  
 “ Shells, which you imagine to be Sea-shells, are  
 “ found in the middle of the Land, you suppose  
 “ that the Deluge was a Sea. But as for me, I

“ conceive that the Water of that Inundation,  
 “ which fell from Heaven, and was consequent-  
 “ ly sweeter and lighter than Salt Water, was  
 “ not so thoroughly mixed and confounded, with  
 “ the Waters of the Sea, but that the one still  
 “ preserved its Freshness, and the other its Salt-  
 “ ness, or Bitterness, and each of them their  
 “ particular Qualities; which being granted, this  
 “ consideration alone, will furnish us with Infe-  
 “ rences (which I leave you to deduce,) that are  
 “ sufficient to destroy all your Conjectures.

16. “ Nor is it less vain, to have recourse to  
 “ Winds, Storms, and Inundations, for a Solu-  
 “ tion of this Mystery. The way of Eruption,  
 “ by which the New *Vesuvius*, or little Moun-  
 “ tain, that had been cast up upon the top,  
 “ from the Bowels of the Old Mount, and the  
 “ *Monte Nuovo* were formed, is not, I confess,  
 “ to be altogether rejected, as being in itself im-  
 “ probable; for, such Hills that should be com-  
 “ posed of Mud, or Slime, and of Sandy Earth,  
 “ mixed with Shells, and other marine Bodies,  
 “ especially in Countries subject to Earthquakes,  
 “ could well enough admit of such an Explana-  
 “ tion. But after all, I see no reason that should  
 “ oblige us to take so wide a compass, for a fa-  
 “ tisfactory solution of this Phænomenon; for to  
 “ give you my thoughts of it in few Words, I  
 “ think it may be easily comprehended, that the  
 “ same

“ fame vertue and properties, by which Shells  
 “ are generated in the Sea, may also form them  
 “ in the Land, provided there is parity of sub-  
 “ stance, and it be equally fit for the production  
 “ of both, and all the Circumstances and Means  
 “ required for their formation, may be found  
 “ in one, as well as in the other. I will not enter  
 “ into a nice Enquiry, whether they are formed  
 “ by Vegetation, or by Intus-susception, as Plants  
 “ grow and are nourished; or by Juxta-position  
 “ and Incrustation, as Bezoar (whether Fossile or  
 “ otherwise generated) is produced, or Stones grow  
 “ in the Kidneys. But choose which Hypothesis  
 “ you will, and after you have diligently examined  
 “ the Formation of Shells, in those places which  
 “ you call natural Beds, it will appear, that the  
 “ same account may be given of the Shells, on  
 “ the Hills of *certaldo*, as of those that are found  
 “ on the Shore at *Legborn*, excepting only, those  
 “ that are said to be generated with the Animals,  
 “ by the Seed in the Eggs.

17. “ I foresee one Objection, which you will  
 “ infallibly urge against me, if you be not pre-  
 “ vented by a timely Answer. You will tell me,  
 “ that Shells are inseparable from Fishes, Snails,  
 “ or other such like Animals, for whose use alone  
 “ nature produces them, according to the com-  
 “ mon Axiom, That Natures does nothing in  
 “ vain.

18. “ To dispatch this pretended difficulty,  
 “ without wandering from the subject of our  
 “ present Controversy, I shall only put you in  
 “ mind of those Shells, that are sometimes found  
 “ in the Kidneys, Imposthumes, and Stomach, of  
 “ which we have such exact and late accounts,  
 “ that the matter of fact is undoubtedly certain;  
 “ (see the *Nouvelles de la Republique*, for *Decem-*  
 “ *ber* 1686, see also *Ambrose Pareus*, and other  
 “ Anatomical Writers:) For if I should ask you,  
 “ for what Creatures these things are generated,  
 “ you must be forced to have recourse to a di-  
 “ stinction of your Aphorism, which may be  
 “ easily accommodated to my Hypothesis.

19. “ If you think to elude the force of these  
 “ Instances, by saying, That the Shell in an Im-  
 “ posthume, is a sort of Monster, from which  
 “ we must not draw a general conclusion; I an-  
 “ swer, that I will not dispute about words, nor  
 “ make too general Conclusions. If Shells in the  
 “ Kidneys, or in Imposthumes, be called Mon-  
 “ sters in your Dictionary, you may, if you please,  
 “ bestow the same Title on those of *Certaldo*.  
 “ Neither must you start new Difficulties, by  
 “ comparing the multitude of these, with the  
 “ small Number of the others: for if the Kidney  
 “ were as big as a Mountain, and contained as  
 “ great a quantity of Matter, fit for the Forma-  
 “ tion of Shells, as the Hill of *Certaldo*, we should  
 “ doubtless,

“ doubtless, find ten thousand Monsters of the  
“ same nature, formed at the same time, in the  
“ same place, and by the same Accident, ought  
“ not to be reckoned more than one.

“ 20. I could easily answer to all your Ob-  
“ jections, but, for a farther illustration of my  
“ Hypothesis, I shall consider more particularly,  
“ the word *in vain*. Nature does nothing in vain,  
“ it is true; but that Shells without Fishes, are  
“ useless Productions of Nature, I deny. The  
“ Variety of the Works of God, in all his Crea-  
“ tures, is universally acknowledged, and the  
“ Reason of it is plain. Thus those Fossil Shells,  
“ that are found in the Heart of Stones and Mar-  
“ ble, were not made in vain, though they ne-  
“ ver enclosed a Fish, nor any other living  
“ Creature. The Stones, called *Ammon's Horns*,  
“ were not formed in vain, though they never  
“ graced the Forehead of a Ram. The Tongue-  
“ like Stones, or *Glossopetra's*, of *Malta*, were  
“ not produced in vain, though they never wag-  
“ ged in the Mouth of an Animal. The same  
“ may be also said of the Stones, called *Astroides*,  
“ *Belemnites*, *Dactyli*, *Judæi*, and an infinite  
“ number of other variously shaped Fossils, re-  
“ sembling Plants, Fruits, Flowers, Animals,  
“ Human Faces. And why then should nature  
“ be confined from sporting herself, in the Pro-  
“ duction of Shells, and at the same time suffer-

“ ed to act on all other occasions, with an un-  
 “ controuled liberty, or, to speak more proper-  
 “ ly, with a perpetual and admirable variety?  
 “ The *German Journal*, for the year 1661, makes  
 “ mention of a Turnep, that exactly resembled  
 “ a hand; and of a Mushrome, from which six  
 “ half-bodied Human Figures issued out.

21. But, Thirdly, Though it is often a difficult task to assign Reasons for their several Kinds, Colours, strange Shapes, and beautiful Impressions; yet I allow that there may be such things as Petrifications, in the common sense of the word, *viz.* The Action of converting Fluids, Woods, and other Matters into Stone. Stones, by growing at all, do in a good measure prove their Existence; however, I shall pursue the method I first proposed;

22. And shall instance in the Petrifications, that are seen upon the Ruins of an ancient Aqueduct, that formerly conveyed water from the Cisterns, commonly called *Solomon's*, to the famous City of *Tyre*, mentioned in *Henry Maundrel's Travels from Aleppo to Jerusalem*, page 52. as follows. As we passed by the Aqueduct, we observed in several Places on its Sides, and under its Arches, rugged Heaps of Matter, resembling Rocks. These were produced by the leakage of the Water, which petrified as it distilled from above; and by the continual adherence of new  
 Matter<sub>2</sub>



Matter, were grown to a large Bulk. That which was most remarkable in them, was the Frame and Configuration of their Parts. They were composed of innumerable Tubes of Stone, of different sizes, cleaving to one another like Icicles. Each Tube, had a small Cavity in its Center, from which its Parts were projected, in form of Rays, to the circumference, after the manner of the Stones, vulgarly called Thunder-stones. And Sir *Hans Sloan* assures us, That at *Jamaica*, several Rivers do petrify their own Channels, by which they sometimes stop their own Courses, by a Sediment, and Cement uniting the Gravel and Sand in their Bottoms.

23. I sent you a piece of Moss, that my Friend assured me, did actually petrify at *Knareborough*, in *Yorkshire*. That Tree-Leaves in *Yorkshire*, *Derbyshire*, and other Places, may have water drop upon them, (as well as upon Moss) and petrify all around them, and of course mix with their substance, till they are so far of their Shape and Marks, as to gain the name of petrified Leaves, I willingly enough admit: But alas! I want Faith to believe, that such short-lived and tender things as Flowers, and Mushrooms, can petrify.

24. We have, at *Aspley*, a Village about seven miles from hence, a Water, which is boldly said, (and almost universally credited too) to convert Wood into Stone, a piece or two whereof I have  
seen ;

seen; but I take them to be no other than natural Stone, with Veins that resemble some sorts of Wood. I send by the Bearer, a piece of another sort of Stone, that nearly resembles old Oaken Wood; an Acquaintane of mine picked it up in a Field, in *Warwickshire*, where they are not uncommon, though pretty much wondered at by the Country People, as well as Gentry. I have heard indeed of a whole Ladder, both Sides and Rounds, that was turned into Stone by it: But to my great mortification, could never learn the name of the Person, who had the Ladder in possession; in short, I would have travelled an hundred miles, without grudging either labour or cost, in paying such profound respect to so rare a Curiosity. If we may credit Naturalists of untainted veracity on all other Accounts, there are Waters in many places that will soon crust over a piece of Wood, with a thin Case of Stone; and if so, perhaps this was the Ladder's Case, I mean if any such Ladder there ever was. About twelve years ago Sir *Roger Burgoine*, Bart. of *Sutton*, in this County, had a Tenant who lost a Horse by Sickness, and upon opening him in order to find out the cause of his Death, one of his Kidneys was entirely petrified, though it still preserved its true natural Shape: It was enclosed with Blood and viscous matter, in a tough Skin, or Bag: Last week I visited Sir *Roger* and saw it.

When

When it was first taken out of the Horse, the rough Side of it was soft, and was twelve months in hardening, whereas the smooth side was as hard as it is now, when taken out. It weighs (in Averdupoise Weight) two Pounds and a half, and two Ounces, being of the size, as well as shape, of a Horse's Kidney, and of a very deep Buff-colour. In *Chili*, upon the Confines of *Peru*, about South Latitude 25, is a River called the River of Salt, because it is so salt, that it cannot be drank, and petrifies what is thrown into it.

25. Let us now advance to our Fourth conclusive Point, *viz.* That it is even possible for us to invent Artificial Stones, which will be very durable. And by Artificial Stones, I mean pulverized Stone, or Gravel, or Sand, well tempered and mixed with Putty, or any other strong Cement, like that which joins together the several parts of a *French* Mill-stone, and does really become as hard as the Stone itself, moulded into what shape or bulk we please, and afterwards dried, either by the natural heat of the Sun, or by Air in the Shade only, or else by the artificial Heat of Fire in Furnaces, that may be contrived for that use.

26. Such are those Stones, in the Lids of some Snuff-Boxes, that are sold pretty commonly at our *London* Toy-shops. Several of my Acquaintance, at their return from *Italy*, shewed me some of the best sort of them; and for farther authority,

city; I refer you to the judicious *Misson* Vol. 3<sup>d</sup>. p. 320. as follows. The shining Stones so generally known under the Name of the *Bononian* Stones, are found on the Hill of *Paderno*, three miles from the City. *Barthol. Zanicheli* is the only Person who knows how to prepare them. Those who have written, that these Stones are shining without being prepared, have not been well informed. They prepare this Phosphorus, if they have a mind in pretty big pieces; and they also prepare it, after they have pulverized them. I took some of both; but this shining quality wasted by degrees, and six years afterwards there was none of it left.

27. Such also is the Mosaic Work with which *St. Mark's* Church at *Venice* is so richly adorned; and in particular, all the Arched Dome is lined with it, says *M. Misson*, vol. 1. page 240. For want of natural Stones, which would have been hard to find for so vast a work, and would have required an immense time to polish and prepare; they were forced to use Pastes, and Compositions of Glass and Enamel melted, and made in a Crucible; this takes a lively and shining Colour, which never wears, nor stains. Every piece of the Mosaic work in this Church is a little Cube, which is not above three lines thick, or sometimes four at the most. All the Field is of mosaic gilded with very bright gold, and incorporated in the Fire, upon the surface of one of the Faces of the Square or Cube;  
and

and the Figures, with their Draperies, and other Ornaments, are coloured according to Nature, by the due laying together of all the Pieces of the Work. All these little bits are disposed according to the design which the Workman has before his eyes, and are joined close together in the Cement that was prepared to receive them; which presently after becomes hard. The best quality of this Work is its Solidity. It has lasted more than six hundred years, without the least diminution of its beauty.

28. I remember that when I was at *Althorp* House, about three miles from *Northampton*, some years ago, among fine Pictures, Busts, and other Curiosities of Art, I was shown a Table, said, and believed by them to be a beautiful black Marble one, with a pack of scattered Cards and Counters most exquisitely well painted thereon, as appeared by one of our Company, who in the dusk of the Evening mistaking them for real Cards, went to take them up. But they were deceived, for I had some months before, seen at *Burleigh* House near *Stamford* in *Lincolnshire*, (a stately Seat of the Earl of *Exeter*) a Table of the same sort, which was broke into two or three pieces, and upon examination found it to be nothing more than artificial Stone, or Paste as some term it. At *Bromham* a Seat of my Lord *Trevor*, about three miles from hence is a Table of the same kind. Its black ground is

is full as fine as the best polished Black Marble. The Face of the Table is ornamented with a Gold-Finch, and another Bird in extremely natural Colours, with Butterflies, Tulips, and several other Flowers in their natural Colours, and with Wreaths of white Foliages running along through all parts of it. In short, the whole face of the Table is so well done, that it looks just like one single piece of polished Marble; and indeed at one Corner which was a little broken, I found it, upon trial with the point of a sharp Pen-knife, to be as hard as Marble. It seems a sort of Glassy Composition.

29. The general opinion is; That the little Pillars or Pilasters on the inside of Gothick Cathedrals, and other such like Churches, are artificial, and the reasons assigned for this opinion, are as follow; *viz*; First, They are all of one blewish Colour, which could hardly be supposed, if they werē not all hewn out of one particular sort of Stone; and this is hardly possible, because as most *English* Stones differ in Colour, as well as other qualities, it must have been an infinite expence to have conveyed them from one or two Quarries, to all those distinct Buildings in most (if not all) Counties in *England*. Secondly, They all consist of one single Stone apiece. Thirdly, That Stone is not of the same kind with the rest of the Church. and Fourthly, That those Pilasters being struck with

with a small Key give a quick sound, but of different sorts or tones, which could not be, were they all of the same kind of natural Stone.

30. At present I see but one objection arising against this general opinion; *viz.* That such a Pillar could bear no great Weight, nor be of any considerable duration. To this may easily be answered; That there is certainly no great Weight laid upon these small Pillars, they being chiefly designed for Ornaments, and that if a reasonable weight was laid upon them, they might notwithstanding be of vast duration. Witness the famous Wall which separates *China* from *Tartary*, and is the eighth as well as far the greatest Wonder of the World, being fifteen hundred miles in length, almost wholly built with Brick (which with Glafs, Rock work, and Potters ware of all kinds, I reckon among the number of Artificial Stones) and has stood above Eighteen hundred years without much decay. Again, *China* Ware is made of a very stiff Clay, or rather soft white Stone, which is pounded, made into paste, and afterwards brought to perfection, partly by the Sun, partly by air in the shade, and partly by baking them in furnaces: However, the fine Porcellane Tower at *Nankin* in *China* is faced with it, and though it is now above three hundred years old, does still appear wondrous beautiful.

31. In plain, we see the Morter in some old ruined Buildings, (particularly about *Norwich* in *Norfolk*, and *St. Edmond's Bury* in *Suffolk*) to be grown harder than most if not all sorts of Stone, as it were in defiance to the destroying Scythe of old Father Time. And it is my sincere belief; That if Stone Jugs or white *Fulham* Ware, were made into the shape and size of Bricks, and then well set together with such good strong Morter or Cement, a Building raised up wholly of them would be more durable than one made of the best *Portland* Stone; It might last for more ages than will the great Wall of *China*, or the Pyramids of *Egypt*. But further, if Crucibles (or Bremen Pots, so called as being imported from that Hanse Town) were framed in the shape and size of large Brick, and so put into a massy Building, I see no manner of reason why they should not last as long as Granite, or Porphyry, the two hardest sorts of Marble: Nay they would not only stand the weather for ages, but even of a very sharp assault from that destructive Element the Fire: I need not take much pains to prove them Artificial Stone, because every body knows that they are Vessels made of Earth, and so well tempered and baked as to endure the fiercest Fire, for melting Oars, Metals, Minerals, &c.

32 The Porcelane Tower at *Nankin* obliges me to acquaint you, that I have always entertain-  
ed



a high veneration for Oriental Art, and Ingenuity; and the *Indian* Pagod made from a preparation of Rice, which Dr. *Taylor* showed us in your University Library, is one of the greatest Proofs of their Art I ever saw, and an exquisite Master-piece in its kind. I have frequently met with smaller Pagods, Tea-Pots, Bowls, and other fine things of various sorts, made of Rice so prepared; and (for ought I know) if we *Europeans* were let into the Secret of preparing it, we might allow it to be as durable as Brick; I have no notion of our being capable to improve upon their Art, because we usually go backward in that respect. For instance, what ordinary Morter do we now-a-days make in comparison of that which we meet with in old ruinous Buildings in most parts of *England*, particularly at *Norwich*, and *St. Edmund's Bury*.

33. My own serious judgement upon this Fourth and last article is (as I said before) in the 25 paragraph of this Letter, that it is even possible for us to invent Artificial Stones, which will be very durable. Dear Sir, I am very sensible that I have entered too far into your peculiar Province, without sagacity enough to keep me from wandering out of the right Path: However, if you please to correct any errors, you may spy, either in this or any of my preceding Letters, they shall as soon as known to me, be thankfully acknowledged, and

M

amended:

amended : In the mean while I design to conclude this long Letter with the following Paragraph.

. 34. In the month of *June* in the year of our Lord 1724, I went from *Burgh* in the *South Marsh* of *Lincolnshire*, to pay a visit to a Friend at *Louth* a more considerable Market Town in the same County ; and after we had taken a view of their spacious Church, and lofty Spire, which they insist upon to be exactly of the same height with *Grantham* Spire, as well as with the beautiful Tower of *Boston* , my Friend walked along with me to a Spring of clear and excellent Water, that might be three yards wide and ankle deep, and that issued out at the foot of the Wolds there : not far below which place, they made it into an admirable Cold Bath. It was then a pretty quick Stream, and would continue such all the Summer season. He told me, that the Townsmen wondered very much, to see it dry in Winter, and to run so fast in Summer ; But then they never once considered, what he and I agreed in, *viz*, That underground in those Wold Hills, there must be large Cavities or Reservoirs of Water, which the Winter Rains would ( sufficiently to answer that end) fill before Summer came on, at which time those subterraneous Waters began to descend, and vent themselves at the mouth of this Spring, just so long as till the Reservoirs were emptied, and that was at the approach of Winter. There is a  
small

small Spring of the same Nature which I have not yet seen at *Pavenham* in this County of *Bedford*: It runs well all Summer, but is dry in Winter; and undoubtedly for the self same reason, it being situate at the foot of the Hills near the river *Ouse*. This I presume to be the case in general of Springs that are usually very low about *Michaelmas*. And give me leave farther to observe, (from several of my Acquaintance who were eye witnesses of it in their Travels into *Italy*) That the Rivulets of many such Villages as border upon the *Alps*, do always swell, and frequently overflow their common Boundaries, when the Sun is got up so far Northwards towards the Tropick of *Cancer*, as to melt the Snow upon those high Mountains, and of course to send down the Snow-water in Torrents. In short, all springs I believe do owe their original, to Vapours, to Snow, or to Rain.

35. I thought I had finished my Letter; but upon reading this day's *London Evening Post*, I find I have not, there being in it the following remarkable Paragraph taken out of the *Paris Alman* for *November 21. 1742*. "The third Memorial which Mr. *Reaumur* read the 13<sup>th</sup> instant, at the Royal Academy of Sciences, relates to a very curious discovery that has been made at the *Hague* by Mr. *Tremblay*. It is an Aquatick Insect, called a *Polypus*, which has  
 " this

“ this peculiarity in it, that when it is cut into  
 “ feveral Parts, each of thofe Parts produces of  
 “ itfelf, in the fpace of twenty-four hours, what it  
 “ wants to compleat a Body. So that this Infect  
 “ being cut tranfverfly in three Parts, the Part be-  
 “ longing to the Head will produce a Tail: fome  
 “ of thofe Infects have been cut even tranfverfly  
 “ into forty Parts, which each produced what was  
 “ wanting in it, to make a perfect Infect; fo  
 “ that of one Polypus forty were made. If  
 “ they be cut down through the middle from  
 “ head to Tail, each half will produce another.  
 “ On this occafion Mr. *de Reaumur* made feveral  
 “ learned and judicious Observations, particularly  
 “ that as it is an Axiom that Nature is not fingular  
 “ in its Productions, fo there muft be other  
 “ Infects fufceptible of the like wonderful produc-  
 “ tion: He reports, that by Experiments already  
 “ made by him, he has difcovered certain Earth-  
 “ worms that have the fame Properties; but that  
 “ Nature operates in them, in a much larger fpace  
 “ of time.

36. Thefe Experiments put me in mind that  
 in the description of *Lizards*, in paragraph the fe-  
 cond of my fourth Letter, I ought to have men-  
 tioned one property or quality belonging to them,  
 which could never before I went to the *West Indies*,  
 fall under my own cognizance; *viz*; That if one  
 of them had the misfortune to have half of its

Tail

Tail bit, or cut off, it would soon grow again to its usual length, but when it had grown about two inches or less of the length, I could perceive plainly a thin Skin or Film (of the colour of a Spider's Web and almost as thin) coming all over out of that hinder part; and as that Skin or Film was no where else about its Body, I looked upon it as if Nature designed it for a first Coat to cover the other Skin whilst it was young and tender, but which was to drop off, as soon as that became hardened enough to do its office without such assistance. I never met with this observation in any Author; but I frequently took particular notice of it, and told my thoughts to some of my Acquaintance, who did not seem to wonder much at it. It is impossible for me to guess how long this new part of the Tail might be in growing to its usual length, because we there have no Lizards kept tame.

37. Sir *Hans Sloan* in his Natural History of *Jamaica*, tells us how ravenous a Creature the Shark Fish is, but that it is forced to turn upon its Back before it can seize its prey, which gives opportunity to other Fishes to escape its fury. And I must take leave to assure you (as an observation of my own) That as soon as he seizes it, in turning himself upon his Belly to swim away he gives his whole Body such a violent twist as would wrench off the Limb of a Giant, and that with-

out this Twist he could not bite off a Man's Limb, for his Teeth (though indented like a Hand-saw, as well as sharp) are so very short, that they are utterly unqualify'd for so quick an Execution, as you will readily own if you examine his Mouth. I never knew but one such ill Accident to happen in my time, and that was at *Basse Terre* in the Island of *St. Christopher*, in the following manner. A Sailor in going aboard a Ship in the Road, fell backwards out of the Boat into the Sea, and the Water being exceeding clear, one of his Comrades saw a Shark seize him. Hooks baited with Salt Beef or Pork were immediately thrown out from all the Ships and Sloops, with one of which a Shark was caught, played about till quite weary with plunging, and then (by the assistance of a rope put about its middle) was drawn up into the Sloop and killed. The poor Man's Head, with one Leg and Thigh were found in its Maw, but somewhat mangled by the young Sharks that go in and out living upon what Prey the old one catches; Eighteen of whom were found in his Maw, and some of them three foot long; This old Shark was twenty-two foot long. I have often wondered that the like never happened to our Negroes in Fish-hunting, as mentioned in Paragraph 3<sup>d</sup> of my first Letter.

38. In discussing my second conclusive Point, *viz*, That it is a difficult task to assign Reasons  
for

for the several Kinds, Colours, strange Shapes, and beautiful Impressions of Stones; I ought to have acquainted you, That at *Antigua*, there are some large white and roundish Stones, whose inside is hollow, and all over this space, is, as it were, one continued heap of fair Crystal, (but all of a piece with the Face, or outward part) which sometimes does in a tolerable degree represent wrought Diamonds, close together. I had a Ring ornamented with one of them, cut Brilliant-fashion, which looked like a *Bristol* Stone: And if I mistake not, I sent along with my Shells, a piece of one of them that weighed about an Ounce. I must tell you too, That I have, near *Wallingford*, in *Berkshire*, discovered some Flints of the same nature, but do not pretend to account for their Shapes, any more than I would for their Insides, being so much more transparent than the Outside Face of the Stone: *Bristol* Stones grow in the same manner.

39. If you make a question, at Paragraph 36, about the Lizard's Tail growing out again to its usual length, after being bit or cut off, by asking me, whether that new part of the Tail was of the same use with the former, or exactly of the self-same substance; I answer, That I never dissected a Lizard; that its Tail drags upon the Ground after it, without any great apparent use that I could perceive; and that if its Tail was

jointed in the middle, with short Bones quite to the end, that bony substance would (in my opinion) scarce grow again, though perhaps the fleshy part might be supplied, with a gristly substance instead of Bone: But as I understand very little, if any thing, of Physick and Anatomy, I give up that knotty point to be unravelled by Physicians and Surgeons,

Your's, W. S.

*Postscript.* Upon recollecton, I am of opinion, That the *Vertebræ* of the Lizard, might go little or no farther backwards, than does the Anus, but be changed to a gristly substance, from thence to the end of its Tail.



## L E T T E R VIII.

*Good Sir,*

**I** Find it much easier, in affairs of this nature, to begin than to finish; To be plain, the tickling itch of Writing has entirely got the better, of what I hoped had been a fixed, unmoveable, resolution, to take up my Pen no more; as is evident enough, by giving you the trouble to read the following Paragraphs.

1. I very well remember, That in our Voyage towards the *Leeward Charibbee* Islands, we were more than once pursued by Millions of Porpusses, who swam along by us like an Arrow sent out of a well-drawn Bow, though we were then under a brisk Gale of Wind: They were at least two hours in passing us so, and the Sea (as far as ever our Eye could discern) was covered wondrous thick with them: They shewed their whole Bodies almost when they jumped, which was every moment. Their Head was shaped pretty much like a Hog's; they seemed to be between five or six feet in length, and something of the Colour of the common Minnows in our *English* Rivers. A day or two after, I observed some of them

them with Noses in the exact form, and full as big as Quart Glass-bottles, on which account they have justly acquired the name of Bottle-noses. *N. B.* They are much larger than the others. They differ strangely from those found upon our *Brittish* Coasts; but that is no great matter of wonder, since they are of such various kinds. About *Cape Horn*, they are black on their Back and Fins, and white underneath, with sharp white Noses: They often leap a good height out of the Water, turning their white Bellies uppermost, says *Woods Rogers*, page 103. We struck at several with a Fizz-gig, but had not the good fortune to hit and catch one.

2. As soon as we entered into the Trade-Wind, which does there generally blow from East to West, we were entertained with a sort of Fish that proved entirely new, and of course highly pleasing to me, *viz.* Flying-Fishes, which, *Sir Hans Sloan* says, are of the Herring kind. They are somewhat longer than a Herring, though they are rather thicker and rounder in Body: They have a Fin on each side, close to the Gills, of about four inches long, being broadest, as well as a little rounded at the extremity, just like those blue and speckled Flies, with thick Heads, short Bodies, and long snake-coloured Tails, called by some, *Taylor's*, and others, *the Devil's Needles*, and by some, *May-flies*. If they are chased  
by

by a Dolphin, or any other Fish of Prey, they evade the pursuit, by flying out of the Water, and by continuing that flight, whilst their Fins will keep wet enough for that purpose, which may be as far as thirty or forty yards end ways; for they usually fly in a strait line, though they make some small Wavings. They moved their Fins full as nimbly as *English* Bees, or the fore-mentioned Flies, called *Taylor's*, or *Devil's Needles*, so that we could scarce perceive them; and as they are of a very bright shining colour, they looked exactly like so many pieces of polished Silver, darting it along. Their flight whilst in the Air, is not extraordinary good, I suppose, because two or three of them alighted upon our Ship, in which case they are utterly disabled from rising again. They fly singly, or in whole Flocks like Birds, and far oftener I believe, out of wantonness, more than fear; for if they did not, we must imagine that part of the Sea to be full of Dolphins, and other Fishes of Prey.

3. In our Passage, we met with abundance of Gulph-Weed; it was of a reddish yellow colour, resembling the peeled Skins of Onions, and is called Gulph-Weed, because it is hurried away out of the great Gulph of *Florida*, where the Current runs so extremely rapid northwards always, as to drive along a deep-loaded Vessel, at the swift rate of six miles an hour, without the  
least

least breath of Wind to fill the Sails, and so add to its velocity.

4. Having heard so often of a Calenture, I expected to meet with some instances of it, even before I arrived in the *West-Indies*; but they are now grown very scarce, for I never saw above one Person labouring under it: He was continually laughing, and if I may be indulged in the term, merrily mad: One day in the height of his frenzy, he jumped over-board in *Charles-Town Bay*, but was luckily saved from drowning, by one of his Sailors, or from being devoured by some ravenous Shark: and then confined in our Prison, till the Ship, which he was Master of, was ready to sail, when he went on board, and did perfectly recover his senses, before they reached *Liverpool*. Two Officers of my Acquaintance, belonging to the Regiment stationed there, assured me, that nine or ten years before, they fell into the same Disorder, immediately upon their landing at *Antigua*; and as an unanswerable proof of it, told me, That they frolicked it laughing up and down the Streets of the Town of *St. John*, with a large Lanthorn and Candle at Noon-day; but their fit did not last above a week. It is now customary, when we pass the Tropick of *Cancer*, both to let blood and to purge, (and, as I have heard, to vomit too, if they think their Bodies require so much cleansing,) which  
pre-

precaution perhaps was, formerly, (when Calen-  
tures were said to be frequent) not so constantly  
used.

5. During my five years residence at *Nevis*, I  
observed from *Gingerland*, or the Eastern Side of  
our Island, great numbers of Water-Spouts. They  
seemed to fall from the Clouds like Water, that  
in many small Streams, almost closely joined to-  
gether, descends from a Pump, or rather Cata-  
ract: I never saw any drop down on the Land;  
and on the West-side, in the Sea, they are not  
so easily discernable, because going from us, as  
they are when the East, which is our Trade-  
wind, drives them towards us. But indeed, it is  
impossible for them to fall upon Land; For they  
consist of a large Body of Water, that is exhaled  
or drawn up, (perhaps by some Whirl-wind, as  
in the following Paragraph) in order to fill a  
Cloud, which as soon as done, the residue drops  
down again at once into the Sea, and this is what  
Mariners term the breaking of the Water-  
spout. As I was never within less than two  
miles of one, I cannot be a compleat judge of  
them.

6. I took notice of abundance of what I would  
call Tornadoes, *i. e.* a Whirl-wind suddenly seizes  
upon a Tract of ground, about twenty or thirty  
yards in Diameter, where Sugar-Canes had been  
cut down, and takes up the light trash which was  
separated

separated from about them, and whirls it round and round, to a considerable height in the Air, where it scatters more widely about, and then falls gently down again to the Earth. I do not pretend to account for this Phenomenon.

7. We had, now and then, in the Wane of the Moon, excessive great Lightnings, that were unattended either by Thunder or Rain, and one especially, in the year of our Lord 1718, when I was sent for to visit a sick Person, about twelve a Clock, in a very dark Night. The Lightning begun just as I set out from his House, on my return homewards, and was terrible indeed; for it fell as if it had been liquid, in most monstrous Flashes, several times in every minute. It illuminated the Air all around, and shone so brightly, that I could see the Ships in *Charles Town* Road, as distinctly as if it had been broad day, though I was then two miles off from them; and I could also plainly perceive, the whole Southern side of *St. Christopher's* Island, though some part of it was many miles off. Nay, I was once not a little surprized, as thinking my Horse had been struck dead under me; for he hanged his Ears, straddled widely with all his four Legs, and stood stock still, motionless: However, at last he gave a groan, moved slowly on, and carried me safe home: He seemed now and then to stagger at a large Flash; but I encouraged him what I could,  
by

by causing my Negroe-man to walk on before him. There was not a breath of Wind stirring, and it was wondrous dark between the intervals of the Lightning; But I know not how long it continued, for I went directly to bed, and soon fell asleep. *N. B.* That the Powder Magazine, upon the top of *Brimstone-hill*, in the Island of *St. Christopher*, has been twice within the memory of Man, blown up by common Lightning; but indeed, that is no such mighty wonder, it being situate half a mile in perpendicular height from the Sea Shore.

8. We have no Bees that are hived, and still we meet with excellent Honey, made by the Wild Bees in the Woods, about the Salt-Ponds in *St. Christopher's*, &c. But it will not make tolerable Mead, on account of the Climate's being too warm, as I was assured by my Lady *Stapleton*, who tried it. You need not wonder at the term Wild-Bees, for I suppose they are mostly, if not always, wild in hot Climates. We read in *Matthew* iii. 4. how *St. John the Baptist*, whilst in the Wilderness, lived upon Locusts and Wild Honey. And our Countryman, *Henry Maundrell*, in page 86. assures us, That in many Places of the desolate Plain, adjoining to the *Mare Mortuum*, he perceived a strong scent of Honey and Wax, (the Sun being very hot;) and the Bees were

were very industrious about the Blossoms of that Salt-weed, which the Plain produces.

9. Another singularity I remarked was, That in the Mountain Plantations, where only Asparagus can grow, I have known it fit to cut within the small space of three Calendar Months, reckoning from the time of its being sown in Seeds, that came from *London*: For there, we never transplant the Roots. We are obliged to let it run up to Wood, in order to shade the Bed, from the scorching Rays of the Sun, and the Young ones that grow up under that Wood, we cut to boil: But this soon eats out the Heart of the Compost and Soil; so that a Bed will not hold good, much above two years, and the Asparagus never grows big. Asparagus grows wild in *Spain*.

10. In our Pastures, we meet with a Bush about two yards high, called Sage-Bush. Its Bark is of a shining, though dusky hue, and its Leaves cannot possibly be distinguished, from broad green Sage Leaves, either by sight or smell. Out of pure curiosity, I dried a parcel in the Shade, and made Tea of them. This Tea was of a most beautiful Yellow Colour, but surely bitterer than Gall itself; in short, so extream bitter, that the best of refined Sugar could not render it palatable. I consulted about the Nature of it, with a Doctor of my Acquaintance, who was born at either *Wisnar*, or *Stralsund*, in *Swedish Pomerania*, and  
reck-



reckoned the most skilful Botanist of his Profession, in our Island: He told me, that it was very medicinal, and that he gave it, with good success, to any of his Patients whose case he thought required it, as he did also several other *Nevis* Plants, that were entirely neglected by his Brethren.

11. We have there likewise a Tree called *Didde Doo*, which is of the size and make of a Codlin Apple-tree, but with narrow thin Leaves: It bears a most lovely Flower, of the finest yellow, and liveliest Scarlet Colours, somewhat resembling *Nasturtian* Flowers. It is esteemed as a Sovereign Remedy in the Green Sickness, a very rare Distemper, in so warm a Climate, where the Blood and other Juices of the Body, do usually keep on in pretty regular courses, especially since the warm Climate is so strongly assisted in the Affair, by the frequent Dancing of those young Ladies, as well as their riding singly on Horseback; for the whole force of that skipping and jogging Motion, (says *Baglivi*) terminates downwards, where it raises a Fermentation, by which the stagnating Matter recovers its lost Circulation. At *Antigua*, I saw a whole Hedge of it.

12. After a severe Fever there, I was once troubled with an ugly tickling Cough, and the Doctor ordered me to eat plentifully, of what I

would willingly call a Liquorish Bush, because it tastes like Liquorish, and to either chew, or make Tea of its Roots: I complied with the Prescription, which almost instantaneously caused me to expectorate, and indeed soon cleared my Lungs of the Cough: This bush runs along, (not unlike a Vine) upon common Field Stone Walls, wild, bearing Seeds of a lively Scarlet, and Coal-black Colours, that are as round as Peas; both these Colours are on them all.

13. In Paragraph the Ninth, of my second Letter, I ought to have described the Tamarind-tree, *viz.* as follows. It is a very spreading Tree, and will grow to be thirty foot high, and better: Its main Body is short and thick, and the Boughs long and slender, at the extremity whereof, it is usual with Humming-birds to build their small Nests. The Fruit grows in long brown Pods, like an *English* Bean, and is commonly sold at Apothecaries Shops, here in *England*. Its Leaves are small, but so thick set together, as to afford us an excellent Shade in the Heat of the day. The smallest sort of Humming-birds, is considerably less than a Wren, and of the Colour of a Peacock's Neck, in that part, where the black Ground is finely ornamented, with a glistening greenish blue. They feed upon Prickle-pear Flowers, as *English* Bees do, upon *English* Flowers, and (like Bees) move their Wings so nimbly, as to be scarce discerned

cerned, which makes a humming Noise, that I suppose, first gave them the Name. They can fly swiftly, and I have known one of them give chase to a Hawk, but his diminutive Size and Agility were, I imagine, his only Protection: I have seen four or five sorts of them, and at least nine or ten of the Parrot kind.

14. In Paragraph twenty-nine, of my second Letter, I might have informed you, That the Pelican is a large brownish Dun coloured Bird, (I never was close to one) that delights to be about the Water. Its Crow holds above a Quart, and in it the Female puts Provision for her Young ones, which she can disgorge at pleasure to them; and that, perhaps, gave rise to the old allusion, of a Pelican's tearing open her Breast with her Bill, in order to feed her Young with her own Bowels, rather than suffer them to starve, when we would typify a Person's kind and benevolent disposition.

15. We have a large, long, and stinking fly, of a Chocolate hue, (met with chiefly, in our Lower-ground Plantations, for I do not remember that I ever saw one, in our Mountain Plantation,) that lays a long round Egg, of a brown dusky colour, quite flat at each end, and shaped like a bit of small Stick, half an inch long. This Egg is glutinous, and will stick to any thing, remaining there till the warm Weather hatches

its young : And the great singularity of it lies in its numerous Brood, one single Egg affording above twenty Flies, which, I fancy, no other Egg in the World does. My Friend, Dr. *Sinclair*, put one into a transparent Glass Vial, and kept it so enclosed, till it had produced thirty, that when Young, were of a whitish colour. It does not bite like a Moskito or Gnat, but in the Evening it flies about, and is troublesome to us, by lighting upon any part of us. This nasty Insect is called a Cock Roach, and as I said stinks; being above an inch long.

16. Our Sprats there are covered with Scales, and are a sort of Fish, deservedly admired by every body. They are of two sorts, *viz.* Black Bills, and Yellow Bills. The Black Bills, (so termed, from the Colour of their Mouth) are in my opinion, very fine eating. But the Yellow Bills (so called from a yellowish Stroak near their Gills) are of a poisonous Nature, and of course very seldom, if ever, eaten by White Persons. That is to say, they make a Man both puke and purge. They are generally taken near the Windward Side, where it is supposed, they meet with Veins of Coperas, or some other unwholesome Food.

17. There are seven or eight kinds of Turtle, *alias* Tortoise, though but one of them eatable, which is called Green Turtle, because its fat is of

a green colour, and that not of the fort, whose Shell serves for Snuff-Boxes. They are so common that they need no description; and the manner of catching them at *Nevis*, is as follows. When a Person sees any of their Tracks in the Sea Sands, he next Night sits up to watch, and turn them upon their Backs, and then they are quite helpless. Their Blood is cold; and upon opening one of them, I have seen, at least, two hundred Eggs that are exactly round, (like a School-boy's Marble) taken out of it, about forty of which, were enclosed in whitish tough Skins, with a water-coloured, or jellyish substance round the Yolk, and were ready to be laid at one time. *Woods Rogers*, page 276, saw at the Islands, called *Tres Marias*, in the *South Sea*, a Turtle that had at least eight hundred Eggs in its Belly, a hundred and fifty of which were skinned, and ready for laying at once. The Turtle lays them close to the Sea, which has there, very small Ebbings and Flowings, and covering them lightly with Sand, leaves them to be hatched by the Sun's warm Beams: And this is effected in eight and forty hour's time, as I was informed by those who made it their business to fetch them from Maroon uninhabited Islands, where they are vastly plentiful, and where they see almost every day, great numbers of young ones, not broader than a Shilling, newly hatched, hastening down into the

Sea. *Woods Rogers* asserts the same. As they are disturbed so much at *Nevis*, and other inhabited Islands, they seldom care to come a shore there.

18. We have sometimes an odd sort of Fowl, bred there, between an *English* Drake, and a *Muscovian* Duck; the fore part of it, as far as to the middle of its Body, exactly resembling an *English* Drake, and the hinder part, that of a *Muscovian* Duck. It is very near as large as a *Muscovian* Duck, and reckoned fine eating: But as it is of the Male kind, it never propagates its Species.

19. I have seen frequent Fights between the Sword-Fish and Thraasher as Allies, and the Grampus, their common Enemy, who as naturally encounter each other, when they meet in the Sea, as do the Elephant and Rhinoceros at Land. The Sword-Fish gets underneath the Grampus, and pricks him in the Belly, till he swims on the surface of the Water, and then the Thraasher mounts upon his Back, and beats him sharply with his Tail: In short, they are in a state of perpetual War. I was once (in my passage from *Nevis* to *Antigua*) within less than an hundred yards of a Fight, and do assure you, they caused the Spray of the Sea to fly up very violently all around them, and to the best of my discernment, the Thraasher seemed to fight  
with

with something about three yards long, and like a monstrous broad Sword, issuing from his Nose, and not with his Tail, as is commonly reported. In coming Northward, home for *England*, we saw four or five of these Leviathans, swimming all together, (a thing not very common) not above ten yards off from our Ship: They were of a brownish colour, about twelve yards in length, and two yards in diameter, at the middle, or better. I cannot find any reason, why a Grampus should not be deemed of the Whale-kind, though he has no blowing Hole, to make the Water spout up, out of his Head like a Fountain: Pray why should a blowing Hole be so essential to Whales? A Friend of mine has since assured me, that a Grampus has a Blowing Hole, and that he has frequently seen him spout up the Water like a Fountain, about three yards high; a sight I had never the fortune to behold. Sir *Hans Sloan* says, They have two Spouting-holes, *vid.* his Natural History of, and Voyage to *Jamaica*, page 5.

20. However, it puts me in mind, That seventeen or eighteen years ago, a dead Whale was cast up on shore, at High Water Mark, four miles from *Burgh*, in *Lincolnshire*, which I (with thousands of others) went down to visit, out of pure curiosity. It was a Male Fish, having a fair Pizzle, or Penis, not unlike a Man's. It was thirty-five foot from Nose-end to Tail-end, and

as near as I could guess, (it being partly buried in the Sands) twenty-four foot round, in the thickest place of its Belly; so that I thought it oddly enough shaped. The Person who cut it up, had been one Season in *Greenland*, and called it a Whelp, or Half-Whale. It had no sort of Scales; its Skin being Coal-black as it cut along, as soft as Human Flesh, and not exceeding the fourth part of an inch in thickness. It cut better than a foot thick, in the middle, of Fat (that was full as white as the Fat of Bacon); and I took particular notice, that fair Train Oil followed the Knife as it passed along. The Pieces were the size of my two Fists, being put into Barrels in order to melt down into Oil, and what would not so melt, was afterwards to be boiled. His Eyes were very little bigger, than those of an Ox; his Head was long in proportion to his Body; and his Mouth was about five yards wide from side to side, measuring round by his Nose-End. His Teeth were fine Whale Bone, very thin and flat, and set most regularly, almost close together on the flat Side, the Edge Parts being fixed, one outwards, the other inwards: They might, at the extremity of each side, be three inches in sight, out of the Gums, but they grew longer and longer, the nearer they approached towards the Nose-end, where perhaps, they even exceeded a foot in length: Just at the Point  
where



where both Rows (*viz.* upper and under) met, they resembled a Hair Brush, so that he can be no Fish of Prey, as not being able to masticate any thing tougher than Sea Weeds, and indeed nothing was found in his Maw, but a little Sea-Weed. To finish my Description, his throat was so narrow, that such kinds of Food only, were capacitated to pass down thorough it. His Fins were too young to be good Whale-Bone.

21. The glorious Colours of the Dolphin, (mentioned in Letter 1. paragraph 19.) occasioned my looking lately, into *Salmon's Modern History of all Nations*, in order to see how his account of the Golden-fish of *China*, tallys with the real Fishes, some whereof, the curious Mr. *Margas*, of *London*, keeps now alive in a *China* Basin, that has a hollow piece of Rock-work in its middle, with several Holes in it, thorough which they delight to pass and repass. But I find Mr. *Salmon's* Account to be imperfect; that of the real Fishes being as follows, *viz.* They are from two to fourteen inches long, and no one could ever distinguish the Male from the Female: They are of almost all Colours, interspersed in small spots, *viz.* some Red, some Red and Gold, some White and Purple, some Silver and Red, some Yellow and Red, and some gilded all over: There are never two of the same sort: Their Tails are either quite flat or else triangular: Some are of various Colours

lours on the Back and a clear filver white on the Belly. Their heads are of different Colours, some being all over filver. Their Fins are generally red, and sometimes the Colour of their Heads. In short they are extreamly beautiful. Mr. *Margas* sent for a dozen of them by an *East-India* Captain. In *China* they were all red, except two; But when they came hither they changed into all manner of Colours. They live in *Thames* Water; and if the Bafon be filled with muddy Water, they will purify and render it full as clear as the finest Pump Water in a quarter of an hour or less. Sometimes he gives them a little piece of Bread; but he thinks they are better without it, as having several die when he fed them, and none when he did not. I am apt to imagine, that they may easily enough preserve Life, by swallowing the Mud, and such Animacula as are found in all Waters, even in the very purest.

22. The word *Tornado* (or *Turnado*) in the Marine Dialect, signifies a sudden and most violent Storm of Wind (accompanied with dreadful Lightnings) which usually lasts for an hour, and is succeeded by as sudden and still a Calm: These Storms are very common in hot sultry Climates as far as the seventeenth Degree of Latitude on both sides of the Equinoctial; especially when the Sun is at or near their Zenith.

23. We have at *Nevis* Jessamine bushes (not nailed to the walls as here in *England*) that yeild us Flowers full as large as Primroses; These Flowers are as white as Snow, and indeed so thick set together, that the whole Bush (at a very small distance) looks as if it was covered with a large white Holland Sheet: Their scent is proportionably rich and high.

24. The white Cedar there, is a tall Tree which bears a white Flower in shape like a Bell, it's Leaves resembling those of an *English* Pear-Tree. We have also an odd sort of Vegetable (the Name of which I cannot recollect) which I confess to be singular enough: It has neither Leaves, Branches, nor Flowers, nor Roots, and is about as thick and round as a common Whip-cord, usually running along through the tops of Bushes all manner of ways, till it exceeds an hundred yards in length: It is surely one of the most beautiful of all yellow Colours; and what is reckoned yet stranger there, no part of it approaches within three foot of the ground, and it is moreover entirely different from the Bush which breeds and cherishes it. *Quære*, whether this Vegetable is not of the Mistletoe kind, though I never saw it growing upon bulky Trees.

25. *Woods Rogers*, page 32, says, that at Saint *Vincent's* (one of the *Cape de Verd Islands*) there are large Spiders that weave their Webs so strongly be-

ly between the Trees, that it is difficult to get through them; which puts me in mind, that in passing some short Bushes that were seldom frequented on the east side of the Salt Ponds at Saint *Christopher's*, I observed monstrous great Spiders, and as strong Webs that reached from Bush to Bush, though not so strong as those which *Woods Rogers* saw at Saint *Vincent's*: However it was somewhat troublesome walking among them. But indeed the common Spiders in our Houses there, have exceeding big Bodies, and thick, as well as long Legs; Underneath their belly doth breed and hang a white flat and round Bag, which when at maturity comes off, and sticks to any part of our House the Spider pleases. And the young Brood of Spiders are enclosed in this Bag, which when ripe enough for that purpose, bursts (or perhaps is eaten open) to let out considerable numbers of them. We have some Fleas; but no Bugs that ever I heard of, though the Ships in our Bay are often pretty well stocked with them. Our common Ants are troublesome, as well as very numerous; for they oblige us to keep our refined Sugar in large Glass Bottles, that have wide mouths; and after all, these little Animals will eat their way thorough by the side of the Cork: So that instead of Corks, I have known Wooden Stopples made use of for that purpose.

26. In paragraph 37<sup>th</sup> of my seventh Letter, I ought to have informed you, That a Shark Fish never spawns, but breeds its Young in a regular Matrix, situate in the lower part of its Belly. For instance, A Surgeon of my acquaintance saw in the *West Indies* a Female one cut open; She had eleven Young ones of about fourteen Inches apiece long in her, and each of them had a fair Navel-string, (at least of the thickness of his little Finger) that was fastened to the Matrix, which he cut in two with a Knife, and then immediately put the Young ones which were alive into a Bucket of Water, where they swam about a little. Sir *Hans Sloan* in his Voyage to *Jamaica*, Page 23, says: I once on opening one of the Female Sharks found the Eggs in the Ovary perfectly round, as big as the top of one's Thumb; and at another time the Fætus or Young ones in their Coats, lodged in the *Uterus*, after the manner of our Viviparous Creatures; for upon cutting the Coats the small live Fishes came out, being able to frisk and swim up and down the Salt Water. I fancy that Whales, Grampusses, and indeed all other Leviathans of the Ocean, propagate in the self same manner. And if you object against the young Sharks going into the old one's Maw for Food, (as asserted in that Paragraph) I only beg you to remember, that common Vipers here in *England* do the same; especially when they are under a  
fright;

fright ; they then hasten in at the old one's Mouth, in order to secure themselves from harm.

27. Ginger, is a Root that sends up a straight and knobbed Stock better than a foot high, the top whereof is ornamented with a round of long and narrow Leaves, not unlike to our *English* Peach-tree Leaves. The planting of it was neglected in my time. And indeed the Indico Works were then wholly laid aside. However, I saw some few of the Indico Plants grow wild, that were about three foot high, branching out from the main Stock divers ways ; their roundish Leaves (as broad as a Six-pence) as well as the Stock and Boughs, were of a dull, but deep Green Colour, inclining to Brown : The Bush is cut up, then bruised, boiled, and put into a Cistern of water, &c. in order to extract from it the pure Indico, which will settle at Bottom. But for a right account of Indico-making, you must consult Sir *Hans Sloan* in Volume 2. Page 35. As for a description of Sugar-making, I refer you to *Herman Moll's British Empire in America*, about it. Purslain, at our Bath-Plain Plantation was reckoned one of the worst Weeds we had belonging to us. Our Alloes there are entirely neglected.

28. In paragraph 25<sup>th</sup> of this Letter, I forgot to bid you recollect, That *St. Vincent's* and the other *Cape de Verd* Islands (which have this modern Name from *Cape Verd* on the Coast of *Africa*) were

were anciently called *Hesperides*, from *Hesperides* Daughters to *Hesperus*, who had Orchards that bore Golden Fruit. And indeed we may pronounce it in a good measure true of the *Cape de Verd* Islands as well as of *Nevis*, and the other *Charibee* Islands even at this day; for they yield the Inhabitants plenty both of Musk and Water Melons, Pine-Apples, Belle-Apples, Bonanoes, Plantains, Pappas, Shaddocks, Guavas, Pomgranates, Oranges, Lemons, Limes, &c. which put me in mind of *Milton* (book 4. line 249,) where in his description of Paradise, he gives us the following Golden Verses :

*Trees whose rich Fruit burnish'd with Golden  
Rinde,  
Hung amiable, Hesperian Fables true,  
If true, here only and of delicious taste.*

There are, you know, various opinions about the Situation of Paradise; However (without determining in favour of any of them, and which all of them must be trifling and insignificant) if *Dr. Woodward's* Notions of the Deluge, and the great Changes thereby wrought in the superficial Parts of the Earth, be admitted as true; it could not surely be placed in quite so sultry a Latitude as *Nevis* and the *Cape de Verd* Islands are; upon account of the Unhealthiness, Muskitoes, Tornadoes, Hurricanes, Earthquakes, Eruptions, and excessive Heat, all of which I believe to be

inseparable from that Latitude in all parts of the Globe. In short it is easy enough for us to make a Paradise of any Country; that is not too near one of the Poles, by describing it's Excellencies, without mentioning the inconvenient qualities of it.

29. We have at *Nevis* great plenty of a small and prickly sort of Cucumber, that grows wild, and is shaped like a Lemon: we usually boil, though we sometimes (rarely) pickle them. In the year of our Lord 1706, was so violent a Drowth as consumed almost all the Fruits of the Earth; however, Providence was so wondrous kind in that scorch'd-up Season, as to supply the Inhabitants with infinite numbers of them; with near as many as would suffice to preserve life very well without any other Food. The Island had the year before been taken and plundered by the *French*, so that they had two grievous Plagues upon the back of one another, *viz.* War and Famine. They have some *English* Peas, and of several sorts peculiar to that warm Climate, which are unknown to *Great Britain*.

30. Our Sheep have no Wool, but are hairy and smooth-skinned like an *English* Spaniel, being white and generally speaking all over pretty full of small red or black Spots, that resemble those of a fine Spaniel. They usually bring two, three, or four Lambs at a time, that eat as fine as *London*  
House-



House-Lamb, say the good people there, and breed twice if not oftener in a year; and what is more extraordinary, suckle them all: they have no Horns. The Rams are of a pale or faint red colour, and have a thick row of long, strait red Hair hanging down, that extends itself from their lower Jaw along their Throat quite to their Breast, as far as their Fore Legs. At *Nevis* they were esteemed to be as good as the best *English* Mutton, but I could not be of that opinion. We have plenty of Goats, and I thought their young Kids as nice eating almost as *London* House-Lamb: they too are wondrous prolifick. Sir *Hans Sloan* in his Introduction, p. 20, affirms that at *Jamaica*, Rats are sold by the dozen, and when they have been bred among the Sugar-Canes, are thought by some discerning People, very delicious Victuals. Some Negroes at *Nevis* do eat them, wrapping them up in Bonano-leaves to bake them as it were under warm Embers. I own they are fat and look well; two Whites of my Acquaintance eat of them, once out of pure Curiosity, and said, they did not taste amiss, though quite different from any other sort of Food.

31. Our Porkets feeding upon *Indian* Corn, *Spanish* Potatoes, and Sugar-Cane Juice, during Crop-time, their Flesh is of course exceeding sweet, and white as well as fat. Our Fowls being fed with the same sort of diet are good, and our

Turkies of which we have vast plenty, are extraordinarily so. Our Veal is small, fat, and white, without any more art than once bleeding. But our Beef (the principal support of an *Englishman's* Life) is both lean and tough: I have heard of some tolerable fat Beef, but it was never my fortune to meet with any of it. Our Geese, and *English* Ducks there eat well, but were somewhat scarce, as being chiefly brought to us from *New-England*, and other Northern Colonies. But we have plenty of *Muscovy* Ducks, that eat better there than they do here. We very rarely meet with any Wild Ducks. Our Land Crabs run from place to place usually in the Night, when (and especially after Rain) we catch them by the help of Torch-light; and this Torch is made up of nothing else, but a bundle of Splinters tyed together, and consisting of Fir, yellow Saunders, and other Oily Woods, which though green will yield a competent blaze for a considerable space of time. At *Antigua* they have small, but well-tasted Oysters, that stick to Mangrove-trees that grow close to Creeks.

32. *English* Beans will blossom in our Mountain Plantations, though they never pod. Our Carrots there are very good, but our Turnips and Radishes are stringy and strong. We did not want for Red Roses, but I never saw a White one. Their smell was not so high as here in *England*,

nor

nor were they very common. *English* kinds of Grapes were wondrous scarce, and we had no Peaches, Nectarins, Plumbs, Apricots, Pears, Apples, Goose-berries, Currants, or fine Flowers. Samphire at *Nevis* far exceeds our *English* Samphire that I eat in *Lincolnshire*, and *Norfolk*. Colly-flowers would run up to huge Stalks and large Leaves, but for want of Rain, would never flower. A Parishioner of mine sent home for two Mulberry-trees; they grew indeed, but did not thrive; they bore but once, and then but one single Berry, which came to perfection, and had a good flavour. Our Tobacco there is so strong, that few, or no People of Condition smoak it. In our Mountain Plantations we have many excellent Cucumbers, good common Lettuces, as well as Nasturtiums, French (or Kidney) Beans, Cellery, &c.

33. Our Ship fell down the River *Thames* upon the dissolution of the Hard Frost, in the beginning of King *George* the First's Reign; so that as *England* when I took leave of it, looked dimly, you will easily imagine that in thirty-two days after, I must be transported at the sight of *Nevis*, which having had plenty of Rains just before, was when I arrived, in full beauty. Besides, the Good-nature and Generosity of my Parishioners charmed me: for when I took possession of *St. John's*, the Vestry in a most genteel manner

offered me what present Money I had occasion for, and farther assured me, that they would give me Thirty Pounds *per Annum* above the Salary due by Law; which promise they most honourably kept to the last hour of my stay. This Salary is Sixteen thousand pound weight of Muscovado, or coarse Sugar annually, Three Pounds, or Five hundred weight of Sugar for a Funeral Sermon, and Twelve Shillings and Six-pence for every Christening, Marriage and Burial. But their generous temper would never suffer them to give me so little. *N. B.* That an English Shilling goes for Eighteen-pence there, and *French, Spanish* and *Portuguese* Money bears pretty near the same proportion in value. The King gives Twenty Pounds to us out of the Exchequer, to defray the Charges of our Voyage thither; and I have often heard some of our considerate Gentlemen declare, That provided they might have the liberty of choosing their own Rectors, they would freely augment our Salaries; and further, That if the general run of my Lord Chancellour's Livings, were to be disposed of to *West India* Clergymen, after four or five years stay in that sultry Climate, it would be a most noble Benefaction, as well as vast encouragement to us to travel abroad. But alas! That Scheme is altogether impracticable, as Great Persons Sons, Relations, and Dependants must first be obliged. For the encourage-

ment

ment of Piety and Learning, a worthy Gentleman gave two hundred Pounds worth of Books to found a Library at *Charles Town*, which in my time was under the care of Mr. *Robertson* Rector of the Parish; I hope it is since augmented. The Governour General ordered the Secretary of *Nevis*, to draw up an Instrument which was to serve both as a Presentation and Institution, and for which he generously refused to accept of any Fees. And the showing that Instrument to my Parish Vestry, was looked upon to be a sufficient Induction. As that instrument may prove a Novelty to you, I send you an exact Copy of it here.

“ By his Excellency *Walter Hamilton*, Esq;  
 “ Captain-General, and Chief Governour  
 “ in and over all His Majesty’s *Leeward*  
 [The Seal] “ *Charibbee* Islands in *America*, and Or-  
 “ dinary of the same, &c.

“ **W** Hereas his most Sacred Majesty hath  
 “ given and granted to me, Power and  
 “ Authority of Collating Orthodox Ministers to  
 “ all and every of the Parishes within my respe-  
 “ ctive Government; and whereas the Parish of  
 “ St. *John* in the Island of *Nevis* is at present  
 “ destitute of a *Minister*, and Mr. *William Smith*  
 “ being recommended to me by the Right Reve-  
 “ rend Father in God, *John* Lord Bishop of  
 “ *London*, as a person qualified to take on him the  
 “ Cure of Souls: By vertue of the said Powers  
 “ and Authorities to me granted, I do by these  
 “ Presents, InSTITUTE the said *William Smith*,  
 “ Clerk, Minister of the said Parish; to perform  
 “ all the Duties incumbent on him as Minister of  
 “ the same, and to have and enjoy all such Sal-  
 “ laries Dues and Perquisites as do, or shall belong  
 “ to him either by Law or Custom.

“ Given under my Hand and  
 “ Seal the 18<sup>th</sup> day of  
 “ *April* 1716, in the  
 “ second year of His  
 “ Majesty’s Reign.

*To the Churchwardens  
 and Vestry-men of St.  
 John’s Parish, Nevis.*

*Walter Hamilton.*

Here likewise follows an exact Copy of a Marriage-Licence granted by *Daniel Smith*, Esq; our Lieutenant (or particular) Governour.

*Nevis.*           “ By the Honourable *Daniel Smith*  
                       “ Lieut. Governour, and Ordinary  
                       “ of this Island.

“ **L**icence is hereby granted to any Orthodox  
 “ Minister to join together in the holy  
 “ Estate of Matrimony, *John Bastian*, of this  
 “ Island and Parish of *St. Thomas*, Butcher, and  
 “ *Hannab Griffith* of the Parish aforesaid, Wi-  
 “ dow, according to the Canons and Constitutions  
 “ of the Church of *England*, and the Form pre-  
 “ scribed in the Book of Common Prayer, you  
 “ knowing no Cause or Impediment to the con-  
 “ trary.

“ *Ordinary's Office.*  
 “ *Security taken*  
 “ *by Josiah Webb*  
 “ *Clerk of the Or-*  
 “ *dinary.*

“ Given under my  
 “ Hand *October* the  
 “ 22<sup>d</sup>, 1716.

*Daniel Smith.*

34. An Acquaintance of mine was a Surgeon in the late unfortunate Expedition to *Carthagera*, and he differs from me in his description of a Dolphin, which is as follows, *viz*, “ I caught  
 “ one that was four foot five inches and a half  
 “ long; his Head was shaped much like a Cod’s,  
 “ and of a skie blue colour; his Fins were also  
 “ skie blue, his Body was streaked with green and  
 “ yellow intermixed with dark and light-coloured  
 “ blues, as well as beautified with an admirable  
 “ variety of purple, blue, and livid spots, &c.  
 “ which are very curious whilst it is dying,  
 “ but lose all their fine Colours the moment  
 “ it dies; The finny part of the Tail from the  
 “ two extremities, was Eight inches, and its teeth  
 “ shaped like those of an *English* Jack, though  
 “ much larger.” He also shot several Pelicans;  
 which were about the bigness of our *English*  
 Geese. “ The Pelican’s Head and Beak were not  
 “ unlike those of an *English* Goose too, only the  
 “ Beak was flatter and longer by about five Inches:  
 “ Its Craw when filled does very nearly resem-  
 “ ble a small Cow’s Bladder, and Sailors make  
 “ a Tobacco Pouch of it. And he farther puts me  
 “ in mind, that the Ground Doves mentioned in  
 “ paragraph 29 of my second Letter, are about the  
 “ bigness of an *English* Lark: They are of a cho-  
 “ colate colour, spotted with a dark blue; Their  
 “ Heads are like that of a Robbin Red-breast,  
 “ and



“ and their Eyes and Legs of a most pure red.  
 “ They are good food, and accounted very nourishing.”

35. I am not insensible, how it is confidently affirmed here, as an infallible truth, That Game-Cocks, and Bull-Dogs degenerate out of *England*; but do think it is a vulgar error: for at *Nevis*, we breed excellent Game Cocks; and most Plantations can show a fierce Bull-Dog, particularly the Gentleman I lived with, had no less than three at one time, and one Bull-Bitch had three, if not four Puppies at a single Litter, none of which seemed to want courage, though there was no Bull-baiting in my time, in order to try such Dogs: The warm Clime makes them grow lazy indeed, but alas! I found by experience, that it had the same effect upon Men. We have also there many large Cur-Dogs: However, as we have no Deer, Foxes, Hares, Pheasants, Partridges, or other *English* kinds of Game, to divert a Sportsman, you will not wonder, that we have no Hounds, Grey-Hounds, Setting-Dogs, or common Spaniels: A House-Dog, is the only Dog that can be of use to us. I have farther made it my observation, that some Negroes will eat Dogs Flesh; in which Case our Dogs(both of the Bull, and Cur Breed) do always fly outragiously at them, because the People there imagine they find them out to be Dog-Eaters, by some particular

lar

lar Scent or Fumes iffuing from their Stomach: And I think it very fingular, that I never once heard of a Dog's running mad there, as they too frequently do here in *England*, to the hazard, and even lofs of Men's Lives.

36. Sir *Hans Sloan* in Page 42 of his Voiage to *Jamaica*, fays, That they touched at *Nevis*, which he describes thus. It confifts of one Mountain of about four miles to the top, whence is an eafy defcent to all parts of the Island; but fteepft towards the Town, where is the Road. They have neither Springs nor Rivers, but have what Water they make ufe of from Cifterns, receiving the Rain-water. The Ground is cleared almoft to the Top of the Hill, where yet remains fome Wood, and where are run-away Negroes, that harbour themfelves in it. There are about Two thoufand Inhabitants here, who being gathered together for the Duke of *Albermarle* to review, I found more fwarthy, or of a yellowifh fickly look, than any of the Inhabitants of thefe Iflands. The Town or Road is fortified with Batteries, and a Fort. They have little Money, but buy and pay with Sugars which are black. Their Horfes, which are fmall, as well as many of their Provisions come from *Barbuda*, an Island not far diftant, where Cattel are bred. I went to the top of the Hill to gather Plants, and though it had, nor did not rain at bottom,

yet

“ yet I was taken there, in so great Showers, that I  
“ was wet unto the skin. There is here, a hot  
“ Spring affording a constantly running Rivulet  
“ of Water, made use of for all purposes as com-  
“ mon Water.” Now as that learned Gentleman  
stayed no longer than two days at *Nevis*, he could  
give but a very imperfect account of it, and of  
course I think myself obliged to amend it, *viz.*  
The Mountain I own to be about four miles from  
the top to the Bay at *Charles Town*, (and as men-  
tioned in Paragraph 42 of my second Letter,  
near a mile and a half in perpendicular height;) But  
its descent is very steep from the top half  
way down towards *Charles Town*, and afterwards  
indeed it may be termed an easy descent. We have  
likewise a Hill called *Saddle-Hill*, because it ap-  
pears in the form of a Saddle at the top; we reckon  
it no more than a Hill, but I do assure you  
that it is higher than the great Mountain, called  
*Skiddaw* in *Cumberland*. The Bath is a small Ri-  
ver, and its Water may very well be drank when  
cold, for it has not a very sulphurous Taste;  
There is another River in *Gingerland* called, *New  
River*, and there is a third River near *New-Castle*,  
in the Windward Parish, that is well stocked with  
the finest fat Mulletts and other good Fish. There  
is besides, a Gully (or Gut) in *St. Thomas's* Parish,  
named the *Dungeon*, because its rocky sides are  
high and perpendicular, which always affords ex-  
cellent

cellent Water. We usually drink Cistern Water, when not near these Places. The new Hot Spring, said, in Letter 2<sup>d</sup>, Paragraph 37, to be discovered in clearing a Wood, in *Windward* Parish, by the Whites, was ever known by the Blacks, though not sooner to us White Men. There is a good Spring, in the White Ground, where all Ships are plentifully supplied with fresh Water; and we have several Ponds, that yield us Mulletts, Slimguts, Mud-fish, Silver-fish, Pond-Crabs, and Eels, as well as serve for Drink to our Cattle. Our Mountain (like the Sulphur Mountain at *St. Kitt's*) near the top, will bear nothing but Wild-Pines, and such unprofitable Weeds; but a little lower down, are first Shrubs, and then tall Trees, whither run-away Negroes resort. We had about Eight thousand Negroes in my time, and Twelve hundred Whites, who were remarkably the freshest in colour, and best favoured People in any of the Islands. *Charles* Fort was a sufficient protection to the Ships in the Bay, and to the Town; but the Batteries were entirely neglected, and even grown over with Bushes. We have Money enough for a currency, but pay for most Commodities in *Muscovado* (or blackish) Sugar, because every body strives to lay up their Riches in *London*. Some few of our Horses are brought from *London*, now and then from *Rhode* Island, but chiefly from *New England*, where they

are

are all natural Pacers, and none at all from *Beruda*, which is a small and low Island, close to *Antigua*, and wholly belongs to Sir *William Codrington*: We breed many, but wondrous rarely any fine ones. Except *Irish* Beef salted, Hams, Bacon, pickled Salmon, Sturgeon and Oysters, (all of which are brought us from *Europe*, and the *North American* Colonies,) we breed all our own Provisions, such as Rabbits, Pork, Veal, Mutton, Turkeys, (whose Capons are large fat and fine beyond compare) Geese, Ducks, and Fowls, except such as are brought from *Boston*, &c. We make a little Butter, which is not extraordinary good, and our New Cheese is far worse: We have enough of *Cheshire*, *Warwickshire*, and *Gloucestershire* Cheese. It is no wonder at all, that Sir *Hans Sloan* was wet to the skin on the Mountain, when there was no Rain in the lower Grounds; because Rain often spreads but a narrow compass of Ground, and falls so heavy, that one single minute's continuance of it, would wet through our thin Cloaths. Our usual Butter is salted, and brought to us from *Ireland*, in Firkins: Sometimes we have excellent Butter, from *Bermudas*; but it is dear. We make no Hay, but our Stable Horses, for riding on, are fed with Grass, plucked up (by way of weeding) from among our Sugar Canes, with the green Blades of *Indian* Corn, *Guinea* Corn, with *Scotch* Grass,

Grafs, and with *New England* Oats: As for our Mill Horses, Mules, and Affes, they feed ordinarily in Pastures, but during Crop-time they live on Sugar-Cane tops, and the skimming of our Sugar-Coppers, which last, must be given them sparingly at first, for fear of griping, and perhaps killing them. The bottom part of the Sugar-Cane top, is about the thickness of one's finger, and as it contains a good deal of the natural sweetness, we usually cut it into pieces of an inch and a half long, to give our Saddle Horses; it is wondrous heartning Food, and fattens them a-pace. Our Saddle Horses are very subject to have Ticks (like Sheep-Ticks) breed in their Ears, which if not frequently pulled out, will strangely emaciate, or render them lean. I think it particular enough, That *New England* has but one sort of Horses, viz. Riding-Horses.

*I am, Sir,*

*Your most obedient Servant,*

W<sup>m</sup>. Smith.

## L E T T E R IX.

*Dear Sir,*

I Ought to have informed you long ago, of the reason, why *Nevis* is called the Mother of the *English Leeward Charibbee Islands*, as follows, *viz.* As *England* is governed by King, Lords, and Commons, just so are we ruled by Governour, Council, and Assembly, who can make any Law that will last Twelve Months; but if we would have it last longer, we must have it confirmed by the King's Privy Council; and in all other Cases, we are ruled by the common Statute Law of *England*. Every one of the four great Islands, *viz.* *Nevis*, *St. Christopher's*, *Antigua*, and *Montserrat*, have a particular or private Governour, sent us by the King, who presides over the Council and Assembly both, when any Publick Act of the Country passes, though his Seat is, properly speaking, in the Council-Room; and in case of his Sicknes or Death, the oldest Council-man takes his place, and indeed is stiled President always, (even before) as being on such occasions, his Deputy. But besides, we have a Governor-General, who supercedes the private Governors, and is Chief, wherever he happens to be; and in case of his Death,

his

his Office devolves upon the Governor, (or in case of his Death, the President) and Council of *Nevis*, till the King sends a new one: This Governour, as Ordinary, has the cognizance of Wills, and granting Administrations, and Marriage Licences. Sometimes (perhaps once in twenty years) all these four Councils, and the four Assemblies too, meet together. The Council is nominated by our Governor-General, and represents an *English* House of Lords: And the Assembly serves for a House of Commons, being chosen by the Free-holders of our five Parishes, that is to say, Two Members for each Parish, are annually elected, according to the laudible old Custom of *England*. In my time, the *Nevisians* were a People tenacious of their Liberties; and I charitably hope, that they still persevere in the same Heroic Disposition: In short, should any Member have mentioned a Septennial Assembly, he would have been thought no Friend to their Constitution. It was currently reported, that our then Governor-General, gave for his Commission (which lasts but for three years) Six thousand *English* Pounds, to a favourite Courtier; but I hope it was a false Story; for when he basely tried to persuade the Government here, to take away the Mothership from *Nevis*, and settle it upon *Antigua*, as being the more considerable Island, they absolutely refused to hearken to such a dishonourable insinuation, and forbid



forbid him to make further mention of his Project. *St. Bartholomew* and *Anguilla*, (two Islands of much less note) have their respective Governors appointed them, by our Governor-General, but no Council and Assembly. Pirates are tried at *Nevis* only, as being deemed the Mother Island.

2. Our Negroes (except what are born at *Nevis*) are brought to us from *Guinea*; those from the Gold Coast being the most valuable and hardy, on account of the vast Heats, and of course, scarcity of Provisions there; and those of *Congo* and *Angola* are less set by, because the Plenty of Provision in their own, more temperate, and cool Countries, renders them lazy, and consequently, not so able to endure Work and Fatigue. When they first arrive, they are well rubbed over with Oil, in order to make them look sleek and handsome; and as they can, with a small Comb, curl one another's Hair into inimitable knots, like Roses, &c. it gives a much farther addition to their Beauty; in short, it exceeds the Skill of the best *English* Barber. A Boy or Girl about sixteen years old, may be worth Twenty Pounds Sterling, a Woman Twenty-seven, and a Man Thirty. They live in Huts, on the Western Side of our Dwelling-houses, so that every Plantation resembles a small Town; and the reason why they are seated on the Western

P

side,

side, is, because we breath the pure Eastern Air, without being offended with the least nauseous smell: Our Kitchens and Boyling-houses are on the same side, and for the same Reason.

3. Now and then, these poor Creatures are, by private Traders, stole away out of their own Countries, to the eternal scandal of us Christians: But the usual method of coming by them is, to purchase them, when taken in their Wars with each other; and if some Great Persons concerned in the Trade to *Africa*, are not strangely belied, they frequently set these Black Princes together by the ears, purely that they may buy the Prisoners for Slaves. In my time, a Captain of a private Trader, went to the Coasts of *Guinea*, and after having decoyed two Sons of one of these petty Kings, with their Attendants on board his Ship, sailed away for the *West Indies*, and sold them all there. The Gentleman who bought the Boys, fitted out a *Bermudas* Sloop, with a proper Cargo, and sent the two Boys back, as a Present to their Father, not doubting to make an advantageous Voyage of it; but the Sloop was not returned, before I came home to *England*, from *Nevis*. The Captain was a Villain in grain, as well as an utter Enemy to his Country: For if the Black Prince, who was Father to the two Boys, should have massacred all *Englishmen*,  
that

that fell in his way for some time afterwards, pray who could justly blame him?

4. Another abandoned Wretch, of a Captain, did (about three or four years, before my going to *Nevis*) steal some Negroes off the Coast of *Guinea*, and sold a stout Man and his Wife, with a small sucking Child, to a Gentleman of my Acquaintance, at *Nevis*, who used them well. The poor unfortunate Fellow, assured the Gentleman, That the Captain stole him, and as he was a considerable Person, upon the Coast of *Whiddaw*, he scorned to work at *Nevis*. However, in order to bring him to relish a state of Slavery, by gentle and easy degrees, he set him to look after his Horses, Mules, and Sheep: But he had not been long in that station, before he quarrelled with another of his Master's Negroes, and killed him with a Knife; upon which, he fled away, with his Wife and Child, to the thick Woods, where he immediately erected a Hut, resolving to die rather than submit: However, he was soon found out, and his Hut surrounded with armed White Men, and Negroes, who were resolved to apprehend, and make a publick example of him: He first of all butchered his Wife and Child, and then came out of the Hut with the bloody (reeking) Knife in his hand, offering it to his Master, and saying, that as he had fairly bought, and paid for him, he had a just

right to take away his life: The Master told him, that he must surrender himself, and be tried by the Civil Magistrate; whereupon, he struck at him with the Knife, but was knocked down and secured. The next day he was tried by two Justices of the Peace, who have a discretionary Power, to inflict what Death they please upon such Negroes: The Justices adjudged him to be broke upon the Wheel, and then burnt alive, which Sentence was strictly put in execution: When his Arms, Thighs, and Leg Bones, were broken all to shivers, with an Iron Crow, he did not so much as once cry out Oh! He then desired a Dram of Rum, which was refused him by his Master, who rightly imagined, that he only wanted (if possible) to die drunk; however, a Draught of Water was offered him, which he refused to accept of; they then flung him into a large and fierce Fire, where he expired, with little or no concern. This relation, puts me in mind of *Oroonoko's* tragical Death, at *Surinam*, told by Mrs. *Ann Behn*, in one of her Novels, that bears his Name, and whose History is Truth embellished with some fabulous Circumstances. But pray, what did our Countryman the Captain deserve?

5. Some Negroes believe, That when they die, they return back to their own Native Country; for which reason, they often hang themselves

felves at first coming to us ; of which sort, perhaps, was the Negro, who immediately killed his Wife and Child, and afterwards suffered such a cruel Death undauntedly. Nay, the most intelligent of them, have no manner of Religious Worship, as far as I could ever discover ; though I am told, that at *Jamaica*, the Negroes have, what they call, a Hearing, in some *Guinea* Tongue, *i. e.* One of the most knowing of them, teaches all the rest in a long Speech ; This Assembly, may consist of four or five hundred Blacks. All they owned was, That God is a very Good Man, who lives above the Sky, and that all Good Men when they die, ascend up to live with him, but that even then, the good Blacks will be, in some measure, Slaves to us Whites : As for Men, both Whites and Blacks, they then go down below into the Earth, to live along with *Jumbee*, *viz.* the Devil, whom they insist upon, to be of neither White nor Black, but of a red Mulletto Colour, without Horns, Tail, or cloven Hoofs : However, they all agree, that he has long Red Hair growing on his Breast.

6. I have, since my return to *England*, (several times) heard it objected, by mistaken Zealots, that if the Masters of our Plantation Negroes, would but have them baptized, and that if we Clergymen, would be at the pains to instruct them, they would then do much better in all re-

spects, because the *Christian* Religion, would teach them far better Principles, than they now have to work upon, under a State of Paganism. But alas! these People are by no means competent Judges of so weighty an affair: For a Friend of mine, baptized a Negro Boy, and taught him to read; the Consequence whereof, was, That he might look after his Horse himself, and go on his own Errands for the future, or else, that he might find another Negro to do it: In short, it is ridiculous to argue against repeated Experience; and the true state of the Case, stands thus: When a Slave is once Christened, he conceits that he ought to be upon a level with his Master, in all other respects; in consequence whereof, he presumes, That if his Master corrects him, for ever so great a Fault, he is at full liberty to send him out of the World, by a Dose of Poison. For instance, a Parishioner of mine, baptized a Black Woman, and had her well instructed in our Religion here in *England*, but she had not been long arrived at *Nevis*, before she poisoned four White Persons, and was executed for so doing: But if even the whole Country was so mad, as to set about such an odd Conversion, the effect would then be a general Rebellion, and Massacre, of us Whites: This is Truth.

7. The Negroes, when at work, in hewing Canes, or digging round Holes to plant them in, (perhaps  
forty

forty Persons in a row) sing very merrily, *i. e.* two or three Men with large Voices, and a sort of Base Tone, sing three or four short lines, and then all the rest join at once, in a sort of Chorus, which I have often heard, and seemed to be, *La, Alla, La, La*, well enough, and indeed harmoniously turned, especially when I was at a little distance from them. They sing too at Burials, but get drunk, and have no sign of Devotion, calling out to the Dead Person, and asking him, Why he died, when he wanted nothing the World could afford, to support Nature ?

8. I once went to see, out of pure Curiosity, a Negro Boy, as soon as born ; he looked of a dark Red colour ; and I also visited a Mulatto Child, about half an hour after his Mother was brought to Bed of him, and I do sincerely declare, I could not have distinguished him from a White Woman's Child. But I had like to have forgot to tell you, that about ten years before my arrival at *Nevis*, a young Negro Woman was delivered of two different sorts of Children, at a neighbouring Island, *viz.* a Coal Black one, and a Mulatto, which odd kind of Birth, was accounted for (right, I suppose) thus. Her Husband had carnal knowledge of her, just before he went out to his work, and as soon as he was gone, the White Overseer went to the Hut, and had the like carnal knowledge. At *Charles Town*, our

Metropolis, we hold a Market every *Sunday* Morning, which begins at Sun-rising, and ends about nine o' clock, whither the Negroes bring Fowls, *Indian* Corn, Yams, Garden-stuff of all sorts, &c. But this is no great matter of wonder, if what I have heard be true, that at *Thorney*, near *Peterborough*, the same is weekly practised. The Negroes are fed, generally speaking, upon Salt Herrings, and their Potatoes, which are sweet, and of the *Spanish* kind; they have no thick Stalk, shooting upwards, perpendicularly into the Air (as here in *England*); but their Stalk runs along, close to the Ground, and is ornamented with Leaves, which nearly resemble Vine Leaves: We usually fatten Cows and Rabbits with them: Besides *Indian* Corn or Maiz, I have known some of them to be fond of eating Grasshoppers, or Locusts; others will wrap up Cane Rats, in Bonano-Leaves, and roast them in Wood Embers. During Crop-time, they work night and day almost incessantly; but after all, many a poor Man works harder here in *England*. My Man *Oxford*, had once on a sudden, got a Crebouga, (that is to say, a fleshy substance, not unlike to a Wart) growing out in the middle of the bottom of his Right Foot, that was about the size of a common Nutmeg, and quite lamed him: He was cured in the following manner, *viz.* An old experienced Mulatto Woman, took a good sharp Pen-knife and cut it, till it bled; then she

feared



feared it with a red hot Iron, and applied to the Burn, half of a Lime or Bastard Lemon, which in two or three days time, brought out the whole Crebougá, just like the Core of an Apple: *Oxford* was not lame for it above sixteen days: But to let you the better into the Case, I must acquaint you, that his Parents had the *French Pox*, under which circumstances his Blood was tainted, and showed its Corruption, by his breaking out with the Yaws or running Sores all over, when he was about six or seven years old in his own Country, *viz. Morumbo*: and the Crebougá is the last ill Symptom of that Distemper among Negroes. The Yaws we usually cure by a gentle Salivation.

9. I had almost forgot to inform you, That a Negro cannot be Evidence, in any respect, against a White Man: If he strikes a White Man, the Law condemns him to loose the Hand he strikes with; and if he should happen to draw Blood, he must die for it. If a White Man kills a Black one, he is not tried for his Life; however, the Law obliges him to pay Thirty Pounds, *Nevis* Money, to his Master, for the loss of his Slave. You will say, that these Proceedings are very despotick: But if you consider, that we have near ten Blacks to one White Person, you must own them to be absolutely necessary. I had a Parishioner, who in a barbarous manner murdered one of his own Negroes; and though the  
Law

Law would not hang him for it, yet he underwent a grievous Punishment; for (excepting his own Relations) not a single Gentleman would ever vouchsafe to converse with, or pay him a Visit, after he had committed the horrid Fact. I cannot help relating, that once upon a *Sunday*, an ordinary White Person got drunk and struck a Negro, who being also drunk, returned the Blow with a Stick, and caused the Blood to trickle down his Temples: The Negro immediately ran away to the Woods, but was soon taken: His Master, (who was our chief Judge) to show his Honour, sent for the White Man, offering him, either to deliver up the Negro to be executed, according to Law, or to give him thirty Pounds, *Nevis* Money, to spare his Life, obliging him at the same time to whip him soundly, in order to deter him from the like for the future; The White Man accepted the Money, and whipped well the Negro. I know little of their Laws, beyond Hearsay; because they were never printed; however, any one may examine them at their Secretary's Office.

10. A Captain of my Acquaintance, who was in the late Expedition to *Carthagena*, assures me, That whilst he was upon the Island of *Cuba*, he saw many *Tarantulæ*; but their Bite is not attended with such bad Consequences, as the Bite of those *Italian* ones, mentioned in the tenth Paragraph

ragraph of my fourth Letter. They are chiefly found in Holes and Crevices about Dwelling-houses: They have two Eyes, and two Stumps, like short Horns that stick out of their Heads: They have six or eight Legs: Their Body is about the size of a Hazel Nut, round, and covered with long brown Hair, that lies close to it. One of them bit an Officer just under his Ear, soon after which, he began to talk in a delirious manner, skipping and frisking up and down: But his Friends secured him immediately, sweated him sufficiently, and kept him as quiet and still as possible, for about four hours, when he came perfectly to himself, in all respects, and never relapsed. It is a great pity they did not try what effect Musick would have on him. The same Gentleman assured me, That at *Cuba* he saw common Spiders, whose Body was as broad as his Hand, flat almost an inch in thickness, and whose Legs were proportionable. He saw also vast numbers of Alligators, and some of fifteen feet in length: They roared like Bulls, moved their upper Jaw, but had two Eyes proportioned to their Head; whereas the Crocodile, (Cyclops-like) has no more than one small Eye, which is fixed in the middle of its Forehead.

II. This hairy kind of *Tarantula*, puts me in mind, That when I lived at *Barton*, in *Westmoreland*, I went with some other School-Boys  
into

into a Wood, were we found, accidentally, a huge over-grown Toad, whose Back was covered with milk-white Hairs, that were about half an inch long; these Hairs being not set close together like those of a Dog, but growing a small space asunder. That they were real Hairs, I do positively aver; for we rubbed them over many times with a Stick, and viewed them very narrowly.

12. You told me, the other day, at *Cambridge*, that the Shell which I then brought from *Norwich* to you, was called *Pinna Marina*. It measured twenty inches in length, before I had the ill fortune to break it; and the Meat of it sufficed my Brother, with two of his Companions, for a good Meal, at *Port Mabone*, where it stuck to a Rock near the Shore. The reason why Mariners stile it a Muscle, is, because the Shell of it is more like an *English* Muscle-shell, than any other kind of Shell whatever, and because the Meat, or Fish, contained in it, looked, smelled, and tasted, like that of an *English* one: But as it was ranker, they were obliged to season it high.

13. It never fell in my way, to meet with a *Flamenco*, or *Flamingo* Bird; but I have discoursed with many Persons, who went down to fetch *Lignum Vitæ*, Iron Wood, &c. from the Maroon uninhabited Islands, where there is plenty  
of

of them: And they all agree, That they are full as big as Turkies, that their Feathers are of a most beautiful Scarlet mixed with some few of a White colour, that their Legs are so long as to enable them to wade thorough shallow Ponds like our *English* Herons, that they walk very regularly, abreast of each other, like well trained Soldiers, and that they generally-speaking, fly in a Wedge as do our *European* Wild Geese; which last Article puts me in mind of *Milton*, Book 7. line 425.

————— *part more wise,*  
*In common, rang'd in figure wedge their way,*  
*Intelligent of Seasons, and set forth*  
*Their aerie Caravan high over Seas*  
*Flying, and over Lands with mutual wing*  
*Easing their flight; so steers the prudent Crane*  
*Her annual Voyage, born on Winds.*

I had almost forgot to acquaint you, That at these Maroon Islands, the Sailors eat common Parrots, and say they taste well: But as for Macaws, and other fine Birds of that kind, they are to be found every where in warm Climates, upon the Main Land of *America*: We have no wild Parrots at our principal, and inhabited Islands.

14. Citrons (as do also Lemons) grow upon Bushes, are more round like an Orange, though of a Lemon colour, and peaked at the end: They  
 are

are pared fine, and these fine thin Parings are thoroughly steeped in the best French Brandy: both Brandy and Parings are then put into a Still, and the Liquor distilled from them, is drawn off into transparent Bottles that will hold about a Gallon with some of the best Refined Sugar, nicely sifted; It is shook well four or five times a day for four or five days together, after which it is let stand still and unmoved, in order to subside, and be decanted into Pint or Quart Bottles. I do not see any reason why (in imitation of Citron Water) we might not here in *England* make an excellent Cordial of Lemmon Parings, good Brandy, and refined Sugar so mixed together, and distilled. I mean that the Brandy and Parings should be distilled before the refined Sugar is sifted and put to them.

15. I cannot help speaking a word or two about making of Rum in this Article; viz; when we break up a piece of fresh Ground to plant our Canes in, the Canes for the first two or three years will yield no Sugar, so that we find ourselves obliged to distill their juice for Rum: Another method is, to distill Rum from Molasses; and a third way is, to distill it from the Skimmings of our Sugar-Coppers: I have heard all the three ways contended for as the best by their several advocates, though the last is very seldom tried, because (as I said before) in Crop-  
time

time we usually feed our Mill-horses with Skimmings. However give me leave to observe, that though we have plenty of Molasses brought to *London* and other *English* Ports, yet our most skilful Distillers here cannot turn it into Rum. But indeed Rum cannot be made in *England* for want of natural Heat of Climate to raise up the Ingredients to a due Fermentation for that purpose.

16. I readily assent to the Mariners Maxim, *viz*; That it is hotter at *Nevis* than under the Equinoctial Line, and for the same reason which they assign; *i. e.* because when the Sun gets at any considerable distance Northward from the Equinox, the Earth under the Equinox begins to cool apace, and continues so doing till the Sun returns back again to the same Latitude: Whereas, when the Sun is directly over head at *Nevis*, He not only renders the Earth there very hot, but as he travels no farther Northward than to the Tropick of *Cancer*, the Earth at *Nevis* has not time to cool, and of course must grow much hotter, when he is on his Zenith there in returning towards the Equinox. There must be the same degree of Heat in the same Southern Latitude, from the Equinox to the Tropick of *Capricorn*.

17. There happened no Hurricane whilst I continued Rector of St. *John's* Parish in that Island: But in the Hurricane Months, *viz.* *July*,  
*August*

*August*, and *September*, we had several outrageous Storms, which would have greatly surprized me, had I not beforehand been well informed of their Symptoms, Fury, and Effects. Particularly about the middle of *September*, 1718, the Sun upon his Meridian at high Noon, began to hide his bright Face behind a Cloud, and the Skye that was clear and serene enough before, to lower and blacken apace; now and then fell some large Drops of Rain, attended with sudden unexpected Puffs or Blasts of Wind: upon which we immediately housed our Turkies, Geese, and Ducks, as well as Cocks and Hens, that must all have perished, if we had left them exposed to the severities of such a Tempest. Nay, we secured in Folds with Stone Walls our Sheep, Mill-Horses and Mules. At three o' clock the Windows or Flood-gates of Heaven were opened so wide, as to pour down great abundance of Rain, which together with the high Wind that now shifted round by degrees to every Point of the Compass, obliged us, to secure our Windows and Doors, to dress what Victuals we should have occasion for that day, to turn our Horses out of the Stable, to shift as well as they could among the young Sugar Canes in the *Bath Plain*: nailing up the Door with Boards put across it, and in short, to secure every thing else as much as possible against its rage. I observed, that tho'

it



it blew extremely hard at the Ground, so that we could scarce keep upon our Legs, yet the Clouds looked like Rags, and hung seemingly motionless in the Air, and the Heavens towards the Eye of the Wind, *i. e.* Eastward, appeared as black and dismal as if the universal Frame of Nature was just going to be dissolved. We then put off our wet Cloaths, and kept in our Dwelling-house, expecting the worst; For the Rain and Wind grew much more vehement till ten o' Clock, when to our joy, it broke into loud Claps of Thunder, and large Flashes of Lightning, which are certain Symptoms of the Storm's being at its height, and of course that we might (as we were inclined) safely go to Bed. Early the next morning we got up, and found the Wind vastly abated, though it still brought in a most monstrous swelling Sea into our Road, at *Charles Town*, so that the Ship which had put out into the wide Ocean for fear of being drove ashore, durst not return till three days after. *N. B.* We had one of these Storms every Year.

18. Though the Earth was sufficiently refreshed with the abundance of Rain that fell; yet give me leave to tell you, that all our fine Trees and Bushes were entirely stripped of their Leaves, and looked as if a Fire had run thorough and scorched them to death; according to *Milton*, Book 1. line 612.

————— ; *As when Heaven's Fire*

*Hath scath'd the Forest Oaks, or Mountain  
Pines,*

*With singed top their flatly growth, tho' bare  
Stands on the blasted Heath.*

In short, *Nevisian Leaves* lay then upon the ground,

*Thick as Autumnal Leaves that strow the  
Brooks*

*In Vallombrosa, where th' Etrurian shades*

*High over-arch'd embow'r ; —*

Book 1. Line 302.

However, in a few days, they were new clothed, and adorned with young fresh Leaves, so that the steep sides of our Mountain looked full as smiling and verdant as before, and put me in mind of *Milton's Paradise*, where there was perpetual Spring, Book 4. line 264.

*The Birds their Quire apply ; Aires, vernal Aires,*

*Breathing the smell of Field and Grove, attune*

*The trembling Leaves, while universal Pan*

*Knit with the Graces and the Hours in dance*

*Led on the eternal Spring. Not that fair field*

*Of Enna, where Proserpine gathering flowers*

*Herself a fairer flower by gloomy Dis*

*Was gather'd, which cost Ceres all that pain*

*To seek her through the world ; nor that sweet*

*grove*

Of

*Of Daphne by Orontes, and th' inspir'd  
 Castalian Spring, might with this Paradise  
 Of Eden strive; nor that Nyseian Isle  
 Girt with the River Triton, where old Cham,  
 Whom Gentiles Ammon call and Lybian Jove,  
 Hid Amalthea and her florid Son  
 Young Bacchus, from his Stepdame Rhea's eye;  
 Nor where Abassin Kings their issue guard,  
 Mount Amara, though this by some suppos'd  
 True Paradise under the Ethiop line  
 By Nilus head, enclos'd with shining rock,  
 A whole day's journey high.*

In short; at *Nevis* and the other *Leeward Charibee* Islands, we had a kind of perpetual Spring; for our Orange-trees, Lemmon-shrubs, Shaddocks, Pepper, &c. exhibited at one and the same time fruit that were full grown, half grown, a quarter grown, and even Flowers and Buds; and as for our other Vegetables of all sorts, they were ever fresh and blooming. But after all, let me tell you, we must not look for Paradise, either in the *East* or *West Indies* (as I said before), on account of Earthquakes, excessive Heat, Muskitoes, Hurricanes, &c. We have annually three publick Fasts, *viz.* in the first Weeks of *July*, *August*, and *September*; to implore God's mercy in averting his Judgement of a Hurricane from us; and if He is so gracious as to hearken to our Petitions, we

have in *October* a publick Feast or Thanksgiving for it.

19. We have some Frogs in our Gardens and white swampey Ground behind them westward toward the Sea Side at the South end of *Charles Town*, that skip about, being not yellow like *English* ones, but rather Brown and more of a Toad-Colour, though I never heard of a Toad being seen there. Our Snakes are quite harmless; but our common Flies are exceedingly troublesome, almost as bad as our Muskitoes, which are no other than *West India* Gnats, and perhaps not much more troublesome than our *English* Fenn Gnats. I was credibly informed the other day, that a Manchineal stick with the Bark peeled off, and brought to *London*, will (though dry) if one end of it be put into a pail full of new Milk, and stirred half a dozen times round, immediately turn the whole into Curds and Whey, so forcible is the strength of its Poison even then at such a distance of time. And last Evening I was in company with a Sea Surgeon just arrived from the *West Indies*, who confirms me in my opinion about Water Spouts, as mentioned in Letter 8<sup>th</sup> Paragraph 9. He has seen several, but more particularly observed one, that was so near that it had like to have broke upon their Ship; *viz*; A Whirlwind seized upon a small track of Sea, mounting up a large body of Water round and

and round in a circular winding form, till it reached the Cloud it was to replenish, and continuing so to do for the Space of ten or twelve minutes, whilst it lasted making a very great noise ; But they had the good fortune to disperse it, by firing a great Gun loaded with Shot at it. *Woods Rogers* in Page 373 says, that in their passage from *Guam* to *Batavia*, they saw in one day no less than three Water-Spouts, one of which was in danger of breaking on the Marquis, had not the Dutcheſs, by firing two Shot, broke it before it reached her.

20. I muſt not forget to acquaint you ; that under the Tropick of *Cancer*, on our paſſage towards *Nevis*, we ſaw at leaſt a dozen Tropick Birds, though none of them flew low enough to be ſhot at ; and indeed they are a high-ſoaring Bird, about the bigneſs of a full-grown Partridge, of a milk white colour, with one ſingle white feather (at their Rump) a foot and a half long, which ſerves them for a Tail. There was formerly one of them in the *Muſæum Aſhmoleanum* at *Oxford*: And that on our return to *England*, we met with many Birds, and particularly with a large one called a Sheerwater, being of a browniſh colour, as large almoſt as a Goofe, and ſome of them many hundreds of miles from Land ; they are a ſtrong-winged kind of Fowl, and do frequently alight on the Ocean. I had certainly come back home to *England* quite prejudiced in favour of

the vulgar notion, *viz.* That there is no Tide at all, but in lieu of it, a small irregular Current among our Leeward *Charibee* Islands, had not a Merchant, many years settled at *Nevis*, (who was brought up a Mariner, and reckoned a very skilful one) assured me from his own Observations that we had a very regular, though small Tide there; which smallness we attributed to the want of a Sinus, to confine and raise the Water more. *N. B.* That the River *Amazons*, in *South-America*, directly under the Equator, is twelve hundred Leagues long, fifty Leagues wide, at it's mouth, and its Tide rises five or six fathoms. Here indeed, is Sinus enough to effect it.

21. Since my last return from *Cambridge*, I have inspected your Patron, Dr. *Woodward's* Natural History of the Earth, published in *English*, by *Benjamin Holloway*, L.L.B. and Fellow of the *Royal Society*; and if this natural History be admitted for truth, it is then certain enough, that my Stones, in the shape of hollow Oyster-shells, are rightly accounted for by him, and not by *Maximilian Miffon*. I observe, how he says, in page 50, That Stone in its *Strata* and under ground, does grow gradually more and more hard, and so by little and little attains a compleat Solidity. I never made it my business to examine narrowly into the affair; but that many Stones do grow, is evident enough to me, who shall not trouble

trouble myself to enquire, Whether this growth is effected by Effluvia, Heats, Spars, Salts, &c. You know I have a longish Flint-stone now by me, which I picked up upon the Beach, near the Fort at *Yarmouth*, in *Norfolk*, (where they are not uncommon) in *June* last, out of one end whereof, issues a slender marine Plant that is black, and has a bushy top of a foot long, and whose Roots are all of a piece with the hard Flint-stone: Now I insist, that this Stone and these Roots, must by way of Petrification, have grown from soft to hard not very long ago, unless we suppose the Plant to have been rooted in the Stone, ever since the Deluge: But properly speaking, it is rooted in a brown substance, in the hollow of the Stone, and is now become all of a piece with it. I shall just hint at one more argument, in behalf of my own opinion, in that respect, which among others, is inserted at Paragraph 6, of Letter 7, *viz.* A great live Toad was found at *Yarmouth*, in the Heart or Centre of a *Portland* Stone, that measured three feet in diameter: And I ask, Whether the Stone had lately grown as I there imagine? Or whether the poor Toad had been shut up in it, ever since *Noah's* Flood? The reality of the matter of fact cannot be called in question, because there are multitudes of Eye-witnesses to it, now alive in that Town.

22. Upon the whole, maturely considered, I admit that the present state in general, of most visible things, may be discovered by a due and candid survey of them: But alas! to determine the means, how they arrived at this state, is in most cases too difficult a task for human Understanding to go thorough with. For my own part, I never look attentively upon this beautiful Frame of Heaven and Earth, without putting up a devout Ejaculation or Hymn, in honour to their glorious Author and Mover, God, Omnipotent and Gracious, remembering *Milton*, Book 5, line 557.

————— *Up he rode,*  
*Follow'd with acclamation and the sound*  
*Symphonious, of ten thousand Harps that tun'd*  
*Angelic Harmonies: The Earth, the Air*  
*Resounded, (thou rememberd'st for thou heard'st)*  
*The Heavens and all the Constellations rung,*  
*The Planets in their station list'ning stood,*  
*While the bright pomp ascended jubilant.*  
*Open, ye everlasting Gates, they sung,*  
*Open, ye Heavens, your everlasting Doors, let in*  
*The great Creator from his Work return'd*  
*Magnificent, his Six Day's Work, a World.*

And indeed, I may well thus remember him: For (with the learned and ingenious *Dr. Brown*, in his *Religio Medici*, page 34.) “ I hold, there



“ is a general Beauty in the Works of God, and  
“ therefore no Deformity in any kind or species  
“ of Creature whatsoever: I cannot tell by  
“ what Logick we call a Toad, a Bear, or an  
“ Elephant, ugly, they being created in those  
“ outward shapes and figures, which best express  
“ the Actions of their inward Forms; and hav-  
“ ing passed that general Visitation of God, who  
“ saw that all that he had made was good, that  
“ is, conformable to his Will, which abhors  
“ Deformity, and is the Rule of Order and Beau-  
“ ty; there is no Deformity but in Monstrosity,  
“ wherein notwithstanding there is a kind of  
“ Beauty, Nature so ingeniously contriving the  
“ irregular parts, as they become sometimes  
“ more remarkable, than the principal Fabrick.  
“ To speak yet more narrowly, there never was  
“ any thing ugly, or mishapen, but the Chaos,  
“ wherein notwithstanding to speak strictly, there  
“ was no Deformity, because no Form, nor was  
“ it yet impregnate by the Voice of God: Now  
“ Nature is not at variance with Art, nor Art  
“ with Nature; they being both the Servants of  
“ his Providence: Art is the Perfection of Na-  
“ ture: Were the World now as it was the sixth  
“ day, there were yet a Chaos: Nature hath  
“ made one World, and Art another. In brief,  
“ all things are Artificial, for Nature is the Art  
“ of God.” I should have added to the forego-  
ing

ing Paragraph, as follows. There is an objection, against Dr. *Woodward's* Diffolution of the whole Earth, at the time of the Deluge, which is not very easily answered, *viz.* That *Moses*, in his Description of the four Branches of the River, running out of *Eden*, makes the present Earth (allowing for alterations caused by Earthquakes, &c.) to be identically the same, with the Antidiluvian one, in *Genesis*, 2<sup>d</sup>, 10<sup>th</sup>, 11<sup>th</sup>, 12<sup>th</sup>, 13<sup>th</sup>, 14<sup>th</sup> Verses: *And a River went out of Eden to water the Garden; and from thence it was parted, and became into four Heads. The Name of the first is Pison: And that is it which compasseth Havilah, where there is Gold, and the Gold of that Land is good; there is Bdellium, and the Onyx Stone. And the name of the second is Gihon, the same is it which compasseth the Land of Ethiopia. And the name of the third River is Hiddekel; that is it which goeth towards the East of Assyria. And the fourth River is Euphrates.* Now, that *Moses* is here describing the state of those Branches of the River, just as they were, during his own life-time, is evident enough, because Scripture (as well as other Oriental History and Geography) mention their situation for many hundreds of years, after the decease of that great Prophet. Nor do I so much depend upon the Authority of Commentators, as I do upon the Reasonableness of my opinion;

nion; for these Descriptions had been entirely uselefs, and againft the rules of native fimplicity (which the Holy Ghoft always obferves in fuch accounts,) except thofe very identical Branches had not then barely exifted, but been likewise well known. Nay the *Euphrates* is fo called at this day: And though the others may, long fince, have changed their original Names, yet that is of no validity againft my opinion. Pray, did not *Solomon* build a City in the Wildernefs, calling it *Tadmor*? Did not the *Greeks* afterwards call it *Palmyra*? Did not the Emperor *Adrian*, who was defervedly called the *Wall Flower*, from the many ftately Edifices which he erected, rebuild it out of Ruins, naming it *Adrianople*? And has it not now recovered its priftine Title *Tadmor*, which indeed it never totally loft among the *Syrians* and *Arabs*?

*Dear Sir,*

Though I raife this Objection, againft your Patron, *Dr. Woodward's* Theory of the Earth; yet, if you are able to folve it well, I am always ready to own my miftake; For no Author can lay claim to Infallibility. And for fuch uncharitable People as believe, when I mention things they are entirely unacquainted with, that I muft of courfe make too free with, what they (with a sneer) call, a Traveller's Priviledge; I fmile at their

their unjust Censure, and pity their Prejudice. I shall not imitate that inconsiderate Gentleman, who sent over to the *West-Indies* for a whole Cabbage-tree, on purpose to prove its existence, to some idle-headed Folks, who disbelieved him. There is not the least shadow of reason for so doing: No; we are to rest very well satisfied with such Proofs, as the nature of the affair will admit of; in short, it is impossible for so many thousands who never saw each other, to agree in a falsehood, purely to impose upon such of their Neighbours, as strangely imagine, that they must have seen every thing in the World, tho' perhaps they never travelled above fifty miles from their own Fire-sides: I do not think, that I am bound to find Judgment and Faith, as well as Truth.

*I am,*

*Your sincere Friend,*

W. S.

*Postscript.* Simple Nature is a fine Study, and unbiaſſed Reason, with the assistance of Humility, is the best Judge of it: Grant, kind Heaven, that I may experience the latter part.

## L E T T E R X.

*Dear Sir,*

WHEN I wrote Notes upon *Falconer's Cryptomenifis Patefaeta*, my intent was to republifh that Book, which had many years ago become fo rare, that (excepting in one particular Friend's hand) I could never meet with it, though I confulted with Mr. *Daniel Brown*, without *Temple-Bar*, for whom it was publifhed, and who believed it was almoft no where to be met with, but in great Libraries. Though I had long fince laid afide my defign, and deftroyed them; yet I have at the defire of fome Friends here, communicated a fummary and plain Introduction to common Decyphering, without the leaft intention of advancing into difficult cramp Decyphering, becaufe all my former, and more extenfive Notes, were a long while ago committed to the flames, as intimated at the conclufion of my fixth Letter. In fhort; this Summary and plain Introduction to common Decyphering, contains no other than my firft off-hand Thoughts, at prefent, upon the Subject, and is I hope, eafy enough to be underftood by all Perfons who are willing and fit to be inftructed in it.

2. Now,

2. Now, that a Reader of tolerable capacity, may apprehend my sentiments aright, I here present him with a Catalogue of Words, which he should have recourse to, *viz.* Words consisting of one single Letter are, *a, i, o*; the first of which is discovered, in a cyphered Writing, by its greater frequency, that is to say, by its being generally the highest of them in the Numerical Table, as well as by comparing it with the third Cypher of a Word, which I imagine, stands for the Word *that*. All the Words consisting of two Letters, are as follows, *viz. ab, ba, am, an, as, at, in, is, it, of, ob, bo, on, no, or, do, go, lo, so, to*. I take notice here, that, *to*, is the only two-lettered Word which begins with the Letter *t*; and that the Words, *on* and *no*, discover themselves by consisting of the self-same two Letters, differently placed. Three-lettered Words are in number three hundred seventy and three. Four-lettered Words are almost numberless. The Words I pitch upon to begin Decyphering with, are, *on, no, to, at, it, did, the, that, have, and, are, which, they, these, their, them, where, all, shall, with, those*. Words that afterwards help, by comparing them carefully with cyphered ones in a Writing, *viz. good, what, day, tell, sell, bell, well, will, indeed, see, eye, 'ere, too, soon, thought, therefore, people, estate, nevertheless, heaven, excuse, examine, exercise, church, execute, excellent, experience, noon, follow,*

*follow, goodness, sorrow, borrow, morrow, expatiate, extravagance, remember, redeemer, desires, serve, senses, evermore, please, blessed, George.*

The Writing to be Decyphered.









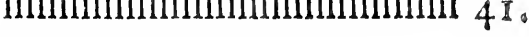
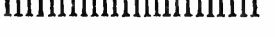
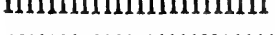
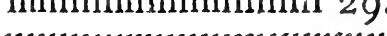

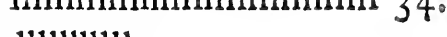



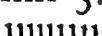



1	2	3	4	5	6		
910240qə	4x5	xn&	079n7□1ə	m9q07&	cox		
7	8	9	10	11	12	13	
09bq	zn&609b75	qx	q0ə	b71m	9□	n□2n7&b91	
14	15	16	17	18	19	20	
6on&60	8ə	q07	z&762xnb	81xx5	xm	q0ə	
21	22	23	24	25	26		
7579&	bx□	07&62mni1ə	1xx3	nzx□	q07		
27	28	29	30	31	32	33	34
b907	9□5	9q	q02b	q207	bx	4n257	9□5
35	36	37	38	39	40	41	
4xn7&□	q07	02□5b	xm	q0ə	b7&n9□qb	q07	
42	43	44	45	46	47	48	
82b0xzb	9□5	z9bqx&b	xm	q0ə	m1x63	q09q	
49	50	51	52	53	54	55	56
q07ə	09ə	19ə	09□5b	bn557□1ə	x□	□x	09□
57	58	59	60	61	62		
8nq	m92qomni1ə	9□5	c2b71ə	0937	60x267		
63	64	65	66	67	68	69	70
xm	m2q	z7&bxb□b	qx	b7&n7	2□	q07	b96&75
71	72	73	74	75	76	77	
02□2bq&ə	xm	q0ə	6on&60	9□5	qx	q0xb7	

78 79 80 81 82 83 84  
 cox bo911 87 x&592□75 qx 9□a ox1a  
 85 86 87 88 89 90  
 mn□6q2x□ 42n7 q0a 4&967 9□5 079n7□1a  
 91 92 93 94 95 96  
 87□7526q2x□ q09q 8xq0 8a q072& 12m7  
 97 98 99 100 101 102 103  
 9□5 5x6q&2□7 q07a 09a b7q mx&xq0 q0a  
 104 105 106 107 108 109  
 41x&a 9□5 b7q mx&c9&5 q07 b91n9q2x□  
 110 111 112.  
 xm 911 07□.

I begin



I begin with giving my Reader an exact Numerical Table, of the several different Cyphers, as they stand in order in the above Writing, *viz.*

- 9.  39.
- i.  22.
- o.  10.
- 2.  29.
- 4.  7.
- o.  44.
- q.  46.
- o.  25.
- x.  41.
- 5.  24.
- n.  24.
- &.  29.
- 7.  44.
- .  34.
- m.  11.
- c.  4.
- b.  27.
- z.  5.
- 6.  15.
- 8.  8.
- 3.  2.

In Writings that consist of a Hundred words or upwards, the Letter *e* is almost always the highest upon the Numerical Table; so that the safest

way is to try three or four of the highest of them thus. Though I find the Cypher o up at number forty-four, yet it cannot possibly stand for the Letter *e*, because there is not one three-lettered Word in the Writing, whose last Cypher is o, whereas the word *the* must be found more than once, or even twice, in all Writings of this length. Cypher q is highest of all upon the Numerical Table, *viz.* at Number forty-six, but cannot well prove the Letter *e*, because there are no more than four three-lettered Words in the whole Writing that end with it, whereas the Cypher 7 is almost equal to it in Table number, as well as found at the end of six three-lettered Words. This being thoroughly considered, I guess the Cypher 7 to stand for the Letter *e*, and of course that the sixteenth cyphered Word qo7 stands for the word *the*: But to make still farther proof, I look out for a four-cyphered word which will so far answer it as to stand for the word *that*; and in this search I meet with the forty-eighth cyphered Word qo9q, concluding it to mean the afore-said Word *that*. Now to demonstrate both the cyphered Words qo7 and qo9q to stand for the words *the* and *that*, I find the forty-ninth cyphered Word thus qo7a, supposing it to be the Word *they*; and which I am confirmed in, because the tenth cyphered Word qoa is no less than seven times in the Writing: And it is also full as cer-  
tain,

tain, that though the Cypher  $\alpha$  follows the Letters  $t$  and  $b$  at those seven times, yet it cannot possibly prove the Letter  $e$ , because in the Numerical Table it rises no higher than to twenty-four: And since it is not an  $e$ , it must be the Letter  $y$  of course, which makes me suspect it to be taken out of Scripture or some Prayer-Book; and indeed whenever I find out two Letters in a three-cyphered Word, I very carefully run over the whole Alphabet to discover the third unknown Cypher, and inspect the Numerical Table. And now the seventy-seventh cyphered Word  $q\alpha\times 67$  must consequently stand for the Word *those*, because the afore-discovered Words, *viz. the, that, they*, do exactly tally with it. The fifty-fourth and fifty-fifth cyphered Words  $\times\alpha$   $\alpha\times$  must signify *on* and *no*, because they consist of the same two Cyphers differently placed: But the most frequent way to discover the Letter  $o$ , is by looking out for a two-cyphered Word that begins with a  $t$ , because the other Cypher must be  $o$ . As the Word *and* is so very often in all Writings, it is easily met with thus, *viz. the twenty-eighth cyphered Word  $9\alpha 5$*  will necessarily mean the Word *and*, because it is seven times found in the Writing, and also because the two first Cyphers of it agree with the afore-discovered Words, *viz. the, that, they, those, on, no*. Remarkable Cyphered Words are the seventy-ninth and the hundredth and fifth, *viz. bo911* and *911*, which plainly show themselves

to be the Words *shall* and *all*, especially if we compare the *s* and the *b* in them, with those of the afore-discovered Words. *N. B.* That as soon as I can discover the Word *the*, I immediately write it down upon a fair Paper, setting down after it the other decyphered Words, as fast as I can find them out, on purpose to view them all at once in the following manner, *viz.*

q07, q09q, q07ə, q0xb7, x□, □x, 9□5, b0911,  
*the, that, they, those, on, no, and, shall,*

911.  
*all.*

I very rarely get above five Letters to begin with, but having now beyond expectation gained ten, *viz. t, b, e, a, n, d, o, y, s, l*, I place them under their several Cyphers, just as they come to hand, in the following Plan, *viz.*

1	2	3	4	5	6
910240qə	4x5	xn&	079n7□1ə	m9q07&	cox
<i>al</i>	<i>hty</i>	<i>o</i>	<i>o</i>	<i>hea enly</i>	<i>athe ho</i>

7	8	9	10	11	12	13
09bq zn&609b75	qx	q0ə	b71m	9□	n□2n7&xb91	
<i>bast</i>	<i>based to thysel</i>		<i>an</i>	<i>n</i>	<i>e</i>	<i>sal</i>

14	15	16	17	18	19	20
6on&60	8ə	q07	z&762xnb	81xx5	xm	q0ə
<i>b</i>	<i>b</i>	<i>y</i>	<i>the</i>	<i>e</i>	<i>o</i>	<i>s lood o thy</i>

21	22	23	24	25	26
579&	bx□	07&62mn11ə	1xx3	nzx□	q07
<i>dea</i>	<i>son</i>	<i>e</i>	<i>lly</i>	<i>loo</i>	<i>on the</i>

27 28 29 30 31 32 33 34  
 b9⊙7 9□5 9q q02b q2⊙7 bx 4n257 9□5  
*sa e and at th s t e so de and*

35 36 37 38 39 40  
 4xn7&□ q07 ⊙2□5b xm q0ə b7&ng□qb  
*o e n the nds o thy se ants*

41 42 43 44 45 46 47  
 q07 82boxzb 9□5 z9bqx&zb xm q0ə m1x63  
*the sho s and asto s o thy lo*

48 49 50 51 52 53 54  
 q09q q07ə ⊙9ə 19ə 09□5b bn557□1ə x□  
*that they ay lay hands s ddenly on*

55 56 57 58 59 60 61  
 □x ⊙9□ 8nq m92qomn11ə 9□5 c2b71ə ⊙937  
*no an t a th lly and sely a e*

62 63 64 65 66 67 68  
 60x267 xm m2q z7&bx□b qx b7&xn7 2□  
*ho e of it e sons to se e n*

69 70 71 72 73 74  
 q07 b96&75 ⊙2□2bq&ə xm q0ə 6on&6o  
*the sa ed n st y o thy b b*

75 76 77 78 79 80 81  
 9□5 qx q0xb7 c026o b0911 87 x&592□75  
*and to thofe b b shall e o da ned*

82 83 84 85 86 87 88  
 qx 9□ə 0x1ə mn□6q2x□ 42n7 q0ə 4&967  
*to any holy n t on e thy a e*

89 90 91 92 93  
 9□5 079n7□1ə 87□7526q2x□ q09q q07ə  
*and hea enly ened t on that they*

94 95 96 97 98 99 100  
 99 8xq0 8a q072& 12m7 9□5 5x6q&2□7  
*ay oth y the l e and do t ne*

101 102 103 104 105 106 107  
 b7q mx&q0 q0a 41x&a 9□5 b7q mx&c9&5  
*set o th thy lo y and set o a d*

108 109 110 111 112  
 q07 b91n9q2x□ xm 911 97□.  
*the sal at on o all en.*

I now proceed to compare the Cypher n in the third, eighth, thirteenth, fourteenth, seventeenth, twenty-third, twenty-fifth, thirty-third, thirty-fifth, fortieth, fifty-eighth, sixty-seventh, seventy-fourth, eighty-fifth, eighty-sixth, ninetieth, one hundred and ninth Words; and as I find it stands for the Letter *u*, I immediately set the Letter *u* directly under the Cypher n throughout the whole Writing. I next compare the Cypher 2 in the thirteenth, seventeenth, twenty-third, thirtieth, thirty-first, thirty-third, thirty-seventh, forty-second, fifty-eighth, sixtieth, sixty-second, sixty-fourth, seventy-first, eighty-first, eighty-fifth, eighty-sixth, ninety-first, ninety-seventh, hundredth, ninety-eighth, a hundred and ninth Words; And as I find it stands for the Letter *i*, I immediately set the Letter *i* under the Cypher 2 throughout the whole Writing. I next compare the Cypher & in the fifth, eighth, fourteenth, seventeenth, twenty-first, twenty-third, thirty-fifth, fortieth, forty-fourth

fourth, sixty-seventh, seventieth, seventy-first, seventy-fourth, eighty-first, eighty-eighth, ninety-seventh, hundredth, hundred and second, hundred and fourth, hundred and seventh Words; And as I find it stands for the Letter *r*, I immediately set the Letter *r* under the Cypher & throughout the whole Writing. I next compare the Cypher *m* in the nineteenth, thirty-eighth, forty-fifth, fifty-eighth, sixty-third, sixty-fourth, seventy-second, eighty-fifth, ninety-eighth, a hundred and second, a hundred and seventh, a hundred and tenth Words; and as I find it stands for the Letter *f*, I immediately set the Letter *f* under the Cypher & throughout the whole Writing. I next compare the Cypher 6 in the eighth, fourteenth, seventeenth, twenty-third, forty-seventh, sixty-second, seventieth, seventy-fourth, eighty-fifth, eighty-eighth, ninety-first, a hundredth Words; and as I find it stands for the Letter *c*, I immediately set the Letter *c* under the Cypher 6 throughout the whole Writing. I next compare the Cypher  $\odot$  in the twenty-third, twenty-seventh, thirty-first, thirty-seventh, fiftieth, fifty-sixth, sixty-first, seventy-first, ninety-fourth, a hundred and twelfth Words; And as I find it stands for the Letter *m*, I immediately set the Letter *m* under the Cypher  $\odot$  throughout the whole Writing, which shows itself thus in our second Plan,

1	2	3	4	5	6
9I⊙240qə	4x5	xn&	079n7□Iə	m9q07&	cox
<i>almi</i>	<i>hty</i>	<i>od</i>	<i>our</i>	<i>heavenly</i>	<i>father</i>
					<i>bo</i>

7	8	9	10	11	12
09bq	zn&609b75	qx	q0ə	b7im	9□
<i>bast</i>	<i>urchased</i>	<i>to</i>	<i>thy</i>	<i>self</i>	<i>an</i>

13	14	15	17	18
n□2n7&b9I	6on&60	8ə	q07	z&762xnb
<i>universal</i>	<i>church</i>	<i>y</i>	<i>the</i>	<i>recious</i>

18	19	20	21	22	23
8Ixx5	xm	q0ə	579&	bx□	⊙7&62mniIə
<i>lood</i>	<i>of</i>	<i>thy</i>	<i>dear</i>	<i>son</i>	<i>mercifully</i>

24	25	26	27	28	29	30	31
Ixx3	nzx□	q07	b9⊙7	9□5	9q	q02b	q2⊙7
<i>loo</i>	<i>u</i>	<i>on</i>	<i>the</i>	<i>same</i>	<i>and</i>	<i>at</i>	<i>this</i>
							<i>time</i>

32	33	34	35	36	37	38
bx	4n257	9□5	4xn7&□	q07	⊙2□5b	xm
<i>so</i>	<i>uide</i>	<i>and</i>	<i>overn</i>	<i>the</i>	<i>minds</i>	<i>of</i>

39	40	41	42	43	44
q0ə	b7&xn9□qb	q07	82boxzb	9□5	z9bqx&cb
<i>thy</i>	<i>servants</i>	<i>the</i>	<i>isbo</i>	<i>s</i>	<i>and</i>
					<i>astors</i>

45	46	47	48	49	50	51	52
xm	q0ə	mIx63	q09q	q07ə	⊙9ə	I9ə	09□5b
<i>of</i>	<i>thy</i>	<i>floc</i>	<i>that</i>	<i>they</i>	<i>may</i>	<i>lay</i>	<i>hands</i>

53	54	55	56	57	58
bn557□Iə	x□	□x	⊙9□	8nq	m92qomniIə
<i>suddenly</i>	<i>on</i>	<i>no</i>	<i>man</i>	<i>ut</i>	<i>faithfully</i>

59	60	61	62	63	64
9□5	c2b7Iə	⊙937	60x267	xm	m2q
<i>and</i>	<i>isely</i>	<i>ma</i>	<i>e</i>	<i>choice</i>	<i>of</i>
					<i>fit</i>



65 66 67 68 69 70  
 z7&b×□b qx b7&n7 2□ q07 b96&75  
*ersons to serve in the sacred*

71 72 73 74 75 76 77  
 ⊙2□2bq&æ xm q0æ 6on&60 9□5 qx q0xb7  
*ministry of thy church and to those*

78 79 80 81 82 83 84  
 co260 bo9II 87 x&592□75 qx 9□æ oxIæ  
*hich shall e ordained to any holy*

85 86 87 88 89 90  
 mn□6q2×□ 42n7 q0æ 4&967 9□5 079n7□Iæ  
*function ive thy race and heavenly*

91 92 93 94 95 96  
 87□7526q2×□ q09q q07æ ⊙9æ 8xq0 8æ  
*enediction that they may oth y*

97 98 99 100 101 102  
 q072& 12m7 9□5 5x6q&2□7 b7q m×&c90  
*their life and doctrine set forth*

103 104 105 106 107 108  
 q0æ 4I×&æ 9□5 b7q m×&c9&5 q07  
*thy lory and set forward the*

109 110 111 112  
 b9In9q2×□ xm 9II ⊙7□.  
*salvation of all men.*

I now proceed to compare the Cypher 4 in the thirty-third, thirty-fifth, eighty-sixth, eighty-eighth, a hundred and fourth Words; and as I find it stands for the Letter g, I immediately set the

the Letter *g* under the Cypher 4, throughout the whole Writing. I next compare the Cypher 8 in the fifteenth, eighteenth, forty-second, fifty-seventh, ninety-first, ninety-fifth, ninety-sixth Words; and as I find it stands for the Letter *b*, I immediately set the Letter *b* under the Cypher 8, throughout the whole Writing. I next compare the Cypher 3 in the twenty-fourth, forty-seventh, sixty-first Words; and as I find it stands for the Letter *k*, I immediately set the Letter *k* under the Cypher 3 throughout the whole Writing. I next compare the Cypher 2 in the eighth, seventeenth, twenty-fifth, forty-second, forty-fourth Words; and as I find it stands for the Letter *p*, I immediately set the Letter *p* under the Cypher 2 throughout the whole Writing. I next compare the Cypher *c* in the sixth, sixtieth, a hundred and seventh Words; and as I find it stands for the Letter *w*, I immediately set the Letter *w* under the Cypher *c* throughout the whole Writing, which being now completely Decyphered shows itself thus, *viz.*

910240qə 4x5 xn& 079n7□1ə m9q07& cox  
*almighty god our heavenly father who*

o9bq zn&6o9b75 qx qoə b71m 9□  
*hast purchased to thy self an*

n□2n7&-

n□2n7&b9I 6on&6o 8a qo7 z&762xnb  
*universal church by the precious.*

8I××5 xm qoa 579& bx□ 07&62mni1a  
*blood of thy dear son mercifully*

I××3 nzx□ qo7 b907 9□5 9q qo2b q207  
*look upon the same and at this time*

bx 4n257 9□5 4xn7&□ qo7 02□5b xm  
*so guide and govern the minds of*

qoa b7&n9□qb qo7 82boxzb 9□5 z9bqx&b  
*thy servants the bishops and pastors*

xm qoa mi×63 qo9q qo7a 09a 19a 09□5b  
*of thy flock that they may lay hands*

bn557□1a x□ □x 09□ 8nq m92qomni1a  
*suddenly on no man but faithfully*

9□5 c2b71a 0937 6ox267 xm m2q  
*and wisely make choice of fit*

z7&b×□b qx b7&n7 2□ qo7 b96&75  
*persons to serve in the sacred*

02□2bq&a xm qoa 6on&6o 9□5 qx qoxb7  
*ministry of thy church and to those*

co26o bo911 87 x&592□75 qx 9□a 0x1a  
*which shall be ordained to any holy*

mn□6q2×□ 42n7 qoa 4&967 9□5 079n7□1a  
*function give thy grace and heavenly*

87□7526q2×□ qo9q 8×qo 8a qo72& 12m7  
*benediction that both by their life*

9□5 5×6q&2□7 qo7a 09a b7q mx&qo qoa  
*and doctrine they may set forth thy*

41x&ε 9□5 b7q mx&εc9&5 q07 b91n9q2x□  
*glory and set forward the salvation*

xm 911 ⊙7□.  
*of all men.*

Now follows the Alphabet, *viz.*

9, 8, 6, 5, 7, m, 4, 0, 2, 3, 1, ⊙, □, x, z, &ε, b, q, n, c, ε,  
*a, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, i, k, l, m, n, o, p, r, s, t, u, w, y,*

*N. B.* That I quite overlooked the seventy-fourth, which is a remarkable Word, and as such set down in Paragraph the second, *viz.*

6on&6o  
*church*

There is no occasion for above one single Plan in Decyphering, so that the reason why I made use of three Plans here was, to have my sentiments appear in the clearest light to common understandings: Neither was there any other reason for thus numbering up the hundred and twelve Words, and setting their numbers just above each Word. But indeed, I do not go thorough with all this Scheme, when I am about to Decypher an easy Writing; for I then omit the first part, and begin with comparing Cyphered Words, which I have sufficient cause to suspect must stand for the Words, *on, no, to, at, it, did, the, that;*

*that*; and so I continue doing till the whole Writing is compleatly Decyphered.













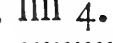
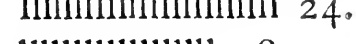
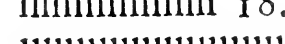
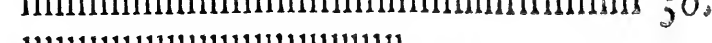
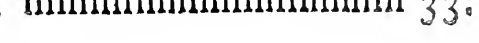
*Falconer*, (whose Treatise I have not seen these eleven years) says, That all the Cyphers of a Cyphered Writing may be close set together, and so make but one single Word; by which means the foregoing Rules that I have laid down, will in a great measure be defeated: And in this case he only advises his Readers, to make suppositions stand for real Words. But as his meaning perhaps may not very easily be understood, I am so free with your Patience, as to give my thoughts upon the matter. Here truly, the Decypherer ought to have two hundred Words to examine into, because the more Words there are, the greater variety of ways they necessarily afford of finding out what the several Cyphers stand for.

The Writing now to be Decyphered, is as follows, *viz.*

x9I⊙240qə4×532□4×m9I I 32□4b9□54×n7&□  
 xn&×m9I I q02□4bc0×b7zxc7&□×6&79qn&7z  
 b98 I 7q×&7b2bqq×c0×⊙2q87 I ×□47q02nbq I əq  
 ×zn□2bob2□□7&b9□5q×8 7⊙7&62mn I q×q07  
 ⊙q09qq&n I ə&7z7□qb9n79□557 I 2n7&nbc70n  
 ⊙8 I ə87b7760q077m&×⊙q0709□5b× m×n&7□  
 7⊙27b989q7q072&z &2 579b bc947q072&⊙9 I

2679□56×□m×n□5q07̄2&57n267bq09qc7872  
 □49&⊙75c2q0q0ə57m7□67⊙9ə87z&7b7&n75  
 7n7&⊙×&7m&×⊙9IIZ7&2Ibq×4I×&2məq077  
 c0×9&qq07×□Iə42n7&×m9IIn26q×&əq0&×n4  
 oq07⊙7&2qb×mq0ə×□Iəb ×□27bnb60&2b q×n  
 &I×&59⊙7□.

I begin with giving an exact Numerical Table of the several different Cyphers in the same order in which I find them in the above Writing, viz.

- x.  33.
- .  26.
- I.  22.
- ⊙.  13.
- 2.  28.
- 4.  11.
- o.  22.
- q.  34.
- ə.  10.
- 5.  13.
- 3.  2.
- .  23.
- m.  4.
- b.  24.
- n.  18.
- 7.  56.
- &.  33.

- c. lllll 6.
- z. lllll 6.
- 6. lllllll 9.
- 8. lllll 7.

Now as I find the Cypher 7 by far the highest in this Numerical Table, I peremptorily affirm it to stand for the Letter *e*. The Cypher q being next in number, I judge it to stand for the Letter *t*. And the Cypher o being at number twenty-two, I suspect it to stand for the Letter *b*. But to prove them all, I look out for two suppositious Words, which will stand for the Words *the* and *that*; and I find them in these Cyphers, viz. qo7 and qo9q: besides, I observe that the two Cyphers q and o are joined together, no less than fourteen times in these few Lines: and to confirm the whole, I also meet with the Cyphered Word qo77 which must of course stand for the Word *thee*. Having discovered these four Letters, *t, b, e, a*, I set them down under their several Cyphers thus in my first Plan.

x9I⊙24oqə4×532□4×m9I132□4b9□54xn7&⊙  
*a bt a a e*

xn&×m9I1qo2□4bcxzb7zxc7&⊙×6&79qn&7z  
*a tb b e e eat e*

b9817q×&7b2bqp×co×⊙2q87I×□47qo2nbqIəq  
*a et e tt e etb t t*

×zn□2bob2□□7&bg□5q×87○7&62mniqxqo7  
*b e a t e t the*

○qo9qq&n1a&7z7□qb9n79□55712n7&nbc7o  
*thatt e e t ea e e eb*

n○81a87b77 6oqo77m&×○qo7o9□5b×m×n&7  
*e ee htbee theba e*

□7○27b989q7qo72&z&257 9bbc947 qo72&○  
*e e a atethe ea a ethe*

912679□56×□m×n□5 qo72&57n267b qo9qc78  
*a ea the e e that e*

72□49&○75c2qoqo957m7□67○9a87z&7b7&n  
*e a e thtb e e e a e e e*

757n7&○×&7m&×○911z7&21bq×41×&2m9qo  
*e e e e a e t tb*

77co×9&qqo7×□1a42n7&×m91in26qx&9qo&  
*ee h a tthe t tb*

×n4oqo7○7&2qbxmqo2□7×□1ab×□27bnb6o&  
*htbe e t tb e e b*

2bq×n&1×&59○7□.  
*t a*

The next Letter I aim at is *o*, which is easily discovered, the Cypher *x* coming no less than seven times immediately after the Cypher *q*, and appearing so high besides upon the Numerical Table. I am pretty certain, that the Cypher *r* stands for the Letter *l*, because it is doubled three times immediately after the Cypher *9*, which stands



stands for the Letter *a*. As the Cyphers 2 and & follow the Cyphers qo7 no less than three several times, I judge them to be the Letters *i* and *r*, so that the Cyphered Word qo72& must necessarily stand for the Word *their*. The Cypher o stands for the Letter *y*, because it follows the Cyphers qo twice, and is upon the Numerical Table no higher than thirteen. And the Cypher o must of course then stand for the Letter *m*, because it is placed between the already discovered Words *the* and *that* which now no other Letter can do. And having thus found out six more Letters, *viz.* *o*, *l*, *i*, *r*, *m*, *y*, I set them down underneath their several Cyphers, as follows in my second Plan.

x9I⊙24oqə4x532□4xm9I132□4b9□54xn7&□  
oalmitky o i o all i a o er

xn&xm9I1qo2□4bcob7zxc7&□x6&79qn&72  
o ro alltbi bo e o er o reat rei

b9817qx&7b2bqxcox⊙2q871x□47qo2nbq1əq  
a letore itto homit elo ethi tlyt

xzn□2bcb2□□7&b9□5q×87⊙7&62mniqxqo7  
o i b i er a to emer i lt the

⊙qo9qq&n1ə&7z7□qb9n79□55712n7&nbc7o  
mthattr lyre e t a ea eliver eb

n⊙81ə87b77 6oqo77m&x⊙qo7o9□5b×m×n&7  
m ly e ee htbee romtheba o o re

□7⊙27b989q7 q072&z&257 9bbc947 q072&⊙  
*emie a atethe r r i e a a ethe r m*  
 912679□56×□m×n□5 q072&57n267b q09qc78  
*a i e a o o their e i e that e*  
 72□49&⊙75c2q0q0957m7□67⊙9987z&7b7&n  
*e i arme itbthy e e emay e r e er*  
 757n7&⊙×&7m&×⊙911z7&21bq×41×&2m9q0  
*e ermore romall eril to lori ytb*  
 77c0×9&qq07×□1942n7&×m911n26q×&9q0&  
*ee boa ttheo ly i ero all i t thr*  
 ×n40q07⊙7&2qb×mq02□7×□19b×□27bnb60&  
*o bthe er to th coly o ie br*  
 2bq×n&1×&59⊙7□.  
*i to rlor ame .*

I proceed now to compare the last Word of  
 all, *viz.* 9⊙7□, with the Word ×□19 in the mid-  
 dle of the last line, and consequently find that the  
 Cypher □ stands for the Letter *n* in both. I look  
 into my Table of remarkable Words, and find that  
 the Word there *evermore*, tallys with the cypher-  
 ed Word 7n7&⊙×&7, But indeed the Word  
*e ermore*,  
 shows itself, so that the Cypher *n* must stand for  
 the Letter *u*. The cyphered Word ⊙91267 shows  
*malie*  
 that the Cypher 6 stands for the Letter *c*. The  
 Cypher *c* in line the third, at the cyphered Word  
 c0x⊙

<sup>co</sup>x<sup>o</sup> shows itself to stand for the Letter *w*; so  
*hom*

that I have gained four Letters more, *viz.* *n*,  
*u*, *c*, *w*, which I add to the others, placing them  
 under their Cyphers in my third Plan.

x91o24oqo4x532□4xmg1i32□4b9□54xn7&□  
*oalmi bty o in o all in an overn*  
 xn&xmg1iqo2□4bcob7zxc7&□x6&79qn&72  
*ouro allthin who e ower no creature i*  
 b9817q×&7b2bqq×co×o2q871×□47qo2nbq1aq  
*a letore i ttowbomit elon ethiu tlyt*  
 xzn□2bob2□□7&b9□5q×8 7o7&62mn1q×qo7  
*o uni b inner an to merci ultothe*  
 oqo9qq&n1o&7z7□qb9n79□55712n7&nbc7on  
*mtthatrulyre ent avean eliveru wcbu*  
 o81o87b776oq o77m&xoqo7o9□5b×m×n&7□  
*m ly e eechtbee romtbehan o ouren*  
 7o27b989q7qo72&z &2579bbc947 qo72&o91  
*emie a atetheir ri ea wa etheirmal*  
 2679□56×□m×n□5qo72&57n267bqo9qc7872  
*icean con oun their evicc thatwe ei*  
 □49&o75c2qoqo357m7□67o9o87z&7b7&n75  
*n arme withtby e encemay e re erve :*  
 7n7&o×&7m&x×o911z7&21bq×41×&2m3qo77  
*evermore romall eril to lori ytbee*  
 co×9&qqo7×□1o42n7&xmg1in26q×&3qo&xn4  
*whoarttheonly ivero allvictorythrou*

oqo7o7&2qb×mqo2□7×□1əb×□27bñb6c&2bq  
*bthemerit o thineonly onie u chri t*  
 ×ñ&1×&59o7□.  
*ourlor amen.*

By comparing the Word  $91\textcircled{2}4\textcircled{q}9$  *almi bty* with the  
 Word  $4\times n7&\square\times n&$  *overnour* I find that the Cypher 4  
 stands for the Letter *g*. The Cypher 8 proves it-  
 self the Letter *b* in the Word  $871\times\square47qo$  *elongetb*. The  
 Cypher *b* must stand for the Letter *s* in the Word  
 $7\square7\textcircled{2}7b$  *enemie*. The *m* is plainly the Letter *f* in  
 the Word  $o7&62mni$  *merci ul*. The Cyphers *z* shows  
 itself the Letter *p* in the Word  $z7&21$  *eril*. The Cy-  
 pher 5 must be the Letter *d* in the Word  $9\square5$  *an*.  
 And the Cypher 3 is beyond doubt the Letter  
*k* in the Words  $3^2\square4$  *ing*  $3\square24b$  *ings*. I now place the  
 Letters *g, b, s, f, p, d, k*, under their several Cyphers  
 as I did before, and of course the whole Writ-  
 ing is plainly Decyphered by me in the following  
 easy manner.

x9i⊙24oqə4×532□4×m9i132□4b9□54×n7&□  
*oalmightygodkingofallkingsandgovern*  
 ×n&×m9i1qo2□4bc0×b7z×c7&□×6&79qn&72  
*ourofallthingswhosepowernocreaturei*  
 b9817q×&7b2bqq×c0×⊙2q871×□47qo2nbq1əq  
*sabletor esisttowhomitbelongethiustlyt*  
 ×zn□2bob2□□7&cb9□5q×87⊙7&62mn1q×qo7  
*opunishsinner sand tobemercifultothe*  
 ⊙qo9qq&n1ə&7z7□qb9n79□55712n7&nbc7o  
*mtthattrulyrepentsaveanddeliverusweb*  
 n⊙81ə87b776oqo77m&×⊙qo7o9□5b×m×n&7  
*umblybeseechtheefromthehandsofour*  
 □7⊙27b989q7qo72&z&2579bbc947qo72&⊙  
*emiesabate their pride as swage their m*  
 912679□56×□m×n□5qo72&57n267bqo9qc78  
*aliceandconfoundtheirdevicesthatweb*  
 72□49&⊙75c2qoqoə57m7□67⊙9ə87z&7b7&n  
*ingarmedwiththydefencemaybe preserv*  
 757n7&⊙×&7m&×⊙911z7&21bq×41×&2məqo  
*edevermorefromallperilstoglorifyth*  
 77c0×9&qqo7×□1ə42n7&×m9i1n26q×&əqo&  
*eewhoarttheonlygiverofallvictorythr*  
 ×n4oqo7⊙7&2qb×mqo2□7×□1əb×□27bnb6o&  
*oughthemeritsofthineonlysoniesuschr*  
 2bq×n&1×&59⊙7□.  
*istourlordamen.*

As I said before, one Plan is sufficient for Decyphering by ; and the reason why I make use of so many here is, to let my sentiments appear in the clearest light I could to common understandings. To conclude this long Article : I frequently get considerable help by comparing a cyphered Word with one of the remarkable Words, mentioned and set down in Paragraph the second : And indeed there are many more Observations which I could easily give ; but I think it needless, because they must naturally occur to the Thoughts of a Decypherer.

3. I observed, last night in a News-Paper, the following remarkable Paragraph, *viz.* “ We  
 “ have at *Toulon*, in *France*, lately discovered the  
 “ secret of making the *Greek Fire*, which is not  
 “ extinguished by Water ; and an experiment  
 “ has very lately been made of it. In order to  
 “ understand this rightly, our Reader must take  
 “ notice, That this kind of Wild-fire was in-  
 “ vented by one *Callinicus*, a *Greek*, Anno Do-  
 “ mini 680. It was composed of Charcoal, Salt,  
 “ Aqua-Vitæ, Sulphur, Pitch, Camphire, &c.  
 “ boiled together, and rolled up in Balls : With  
 “ this combustible matter, the Emperor *Con-*  
 “ *stantius Pogonatus*, i. e. *with the great Beard*,  
 “ burnt a large Fleet of the *Saracens*, which  
 “ had blocked him up in the City of *Constanti-*  
*nople* ;

“ *noble*; as is related fully by the Historian *Zo-*  
 “ *naras*. Now I imagine, that this Preparation,  
 “ or some such kind of Phosphorus, must be the  
 “ secret means of carrying on and supporting the  
 “ Ceremony, kept up by the *Greeks* and *Arme-*  
 “ *nians*, upon a full persuasion, That every  
 “ *Easter-Eve*, there is a miraculous Flame de-  
 “ scends from Heaven, into the Holy Sepulchre  
 “ at *Jerusalem*, and kindles all the Lamps and  
 “ Candles there, as the Sacrifice was burnt at the  
 “ Prayers of *Elijah*, 1 *Kings* xviii. 38. viz. *Then*  
 “ *the Fire of the Lord fell, and consumed the Burnt*  
 “ *Sacrifice, and the Wood, and the Stones, and the*  
 “ *Dust, and licked up the Water that was in the*  
 “ *Trench.*” Our Countryman, *Henry Maundrell*,  
 who was an Eye-witness of this artful Cheat, de-  
 scribes the whole thus, at page 95, of his *Trav-*  
*els, from Aleppo to Jerusalem.*

4. “ Coming to the Church of the *Holy Se-*  
 “ *pulchre*, at *Jerusalem*, we found it crowded  
 “ with a numerous and distracted Mob, making  
 “ a hideous Clamour, very unfit for that sacred  
 “ Place, and better becoming Bacchanals than  
 “ Christians. Getting with some struggle thro’  
 “ this Crowd, we went up into the Gallery on  
 “ that side of the Church next to the *Latin Con-*  
 “ *vent*, from whence we could discern, all that  
 “ passed in this Religious Frenzy.

5. “ They began their Disorders, by running  
 “ round the Holy Sepulchre, with all their might  
 “ and swiftness, crying out as they went, *Huia,*  
 “ which signifies, *This is he,* or *This is it;*  
 “ An expression, by which they assert the  
 “ Verity of the *Christian* Religion. After they  
 “ had by these vertiginous Circulations and  
 “ Clamours, turned their Heads and inflamed  
 “ their Madness, they began to act the most  
 “ Antick Tricks and Postures, in a thousand  
 “ Shapes of Distraction. Sometimes they drag-  
 “ ged one another along the Floor, all round  
 “ the Sepulchre; sometimes they set one Man  
 “ upright upon anothers Shoulders, and in this  
 “ posture marched round; sometimes they took  
 “ Men with their Heels upward, and hurried  
 “ them about in such an indecent manner, as to  
 “ expose their Nudities; sometimes they tumbled  
 “ round the Sepulchre, after the manner of  
 “ Tumblers on the Stage. In a word, nothing  
 “ can be imagined more rude or extrayagant,  
 “ than what was acted upon this occasion.

6. “ In this tumultuous frantick Humour,  
 “ they continued from Twelve till four of the  
 “ Clock: The reason of which delay was, be-  
 “ cause of a Suit that was then in debate, be-  
 “ fore the *Cadi,* between the *Greeks* and *Ar-*  
 “ *menians;* the former endeavouring to ex-  
 “ clude the latter, from having any share in this  
 “ Miracle. Both Parties having expended (as I

was



“ was informed) five thousand Dollars, between  
“ them, in this foolish Controversy, the *Cadi* at  
“ last gave Sentence; That they should enter  
“ the Holy Sepulchre together, as had been usual  
“ at former times. Sentence being thus given, at  
“ Four of the Clock, both Nations went on with  
“ their Ceremony. The *Greeks* first set out, in  
“ a Procession round the Holy Sepulchre, and  
“ immediately at their heels followed the *Arme-*  
“ *nians*. In this order they compassed the Holy  
“ Sepulchre thrice, having produced all their  
“ Gallantry of Standards, Streamers, Crucifixes,  
“ and embroidered Habits upon this occasion.

7. “ Toward the end of this Procession, there  
“ was a Pigeon came fluttering into the Cu-  
“ pola, over the Sepulchre; at sight of which,  
“ there was a greater Shout and Clamour than  
“ before. This Bird, the *Latins* told us, was  
“ purposely let fly by the *Greeks*, to deceive  
“ the People into an opinion, that it was a vi-  
“ sible Descent of the Holy Ghost.

8. “ The Procession being over, the Suffragan  
“ of the *Greek* Patriarch, (he being himself at  
“ *Constantinople*) and the principal *Armenian* Bi-  
“ shop, approached to the Door of the Sepulchre,  
“ and cutting the String with which it is fasten-  
“ ed and sealed, entered in, shutting the Door  
“ after them; all the Candles and Lamps hav-  
“ ing been before extinguished, in the presence  
“ of

“ of the *Turks* and other Witnessess. The Ex-  
 “ clamations were doubled, as the Miracle drew  
 “ nearer to it’s accomplishment; and the People  
 “ pressed with such vehemence towards the Door  
 “ of the Sepulcher, that it was not in the Power  
 “ of the *Turks*, set to guard it, with the se-  
 “ verest Drubs, to keep them off. The Cause  
 “ of their pressing in this manner, is the great  
 “ desire they have to light their Candles at the  
 “ Holy Flame, as soon as it is first brought  
 “ out of the Sepulchre; it being esteemed the  
 “ most sacred and pure, as coming immediately  
 “ from Heaven.

9. “ The two Miracle-mongers, had not been  
 “ above a minute in the Holy Sepulchre, when  
 “ the Glimmering of the Holy Fire was seen,  
 “ or imagined to appear, through some Chinks  
 “ of the Door; and certainly *Bedlam* itself never  
 “ saw such an unruly Transport, as was pro-  
 “ duced in the Mob at this sight.

10. “ Immediately after, out came the two  
 “ Priests with blazing Torches in their hands,  
 “ which they held up at the Door of the Sepul-  
 “ chre, while the People thronged about with  
 “ inexpressible ardour; every one striving to ob-  
 “ tain a part of the first and purest Flame. The  
 “ *Turks* in the mean time, with huge Clubs,  
 “ laid them on without mercy; But all this  
 “ could not repel them, the Excess of their  
 “ Transport

“ Transport making them insensible of Pain.  
 “ Those that got the Fire, applied it immediately to their Beards, Faces, and Bosoms, pretending that it would not burn like an earthly Flame: But I plainly saw, none of them could endure this Experiment long enough to make good that Pretension.

11. “ So many Hands being employed, you may be sure, it could not be long before innumerable Tapers were lighted. The whole Church, Galleries, and every place seemed instantly to be in a flame; and with this Illumination the Ceremony ended.

12. “ It must be owned, that those two within the Sepulchre, performed their part with great quickness and dexterity: But the Behaviour of the Rabble without, very much discredited the Miracle. The *Latins* take a great deal of pains to expose this Ceremony, as a most shameful Imposture, and a Scandal to the *Christian* Religion; perhaps out of envy, that others should be masters of so gainful a Business. But the *Greeks* and *Armenians* pin their Faith upon it, and make their Pilgrimages chiefly upon this Motive: And it is the deplorable Unhappiness of their Priests, that having acted the Cheat so long already, they are now forced to stand to it, for fear of endangering the Apostacy of their People. Going out of the Church,  
 “ after

“ after the Rout was over, we saw several Peo-  
 “ ple gathered about the Stone of Uñction, who  
 “ having got a good store of Candles, lighted  
 “ with the Holy Fire, were employed in dawb-  
 “ ing pieces of Linnen with the Wicks of them  
 “ and the melting Wax; which pieces of Lin-  
 “ nen were designed for Winding Sheets: And  
 “ it is the real opinion of these poor People,  
 “ That if they can but have the happiness to  
 “ be buried in a Shroud finuted with this Ce-  
 “ lestial Fire, it will certainly secure them from  
 “ the Flames of Hell.

13. Now my opinion of this Ceremony is,  
 That it is wicked; but notwithstanding, the *Latins*  
 ought first of all to remove the large Beam out  
 of their own Eye, before they presume to disco-  
 ver the smaller Mote in the Eye of the *Greeks*  
 and *Armenians*, *i. e.* as they have been frequently  
 detected in attempting to impose Sham Miracles  
 upon their Lay Brethren; so they ought not to  
 find fault with the others for doing the same once  
 a year. I shall mention but one particular in-  
 stance (out of great numbers that I could name)  
 against these dissatisfied *Latins*. They audaciously  
 assert, That the Blood of St. *Januarius*, (the Tu-  
 telar Saint of *Naples*) boiles up as often as it ap-  
 proaches the Shrine, wherein his Body is deposit-  
 ed; so that here we behold the repetition of a  
 Miracle, whenever their crafty Priesthood can  
 find

find their account in it. But *Maximilian Miffon*, observes rightly enough on this occasion, That nothing is more easy than to prepare a certain Composition or Mixture of Drugs of any consistence and colour, that shews some Motion without Fire, by their fermenting together. An Acquaintance of mine, on his Travels, happened to be at *Naples*, at the time of this Jugling Trick's being played; and curiosity tempted him to be a Spectator. The Electoral Prince of *Bavaria* (now both Elector and Emperor too, if not deprived of those Honours by the Queen of *Hungary* and her Allies) was present, with seeming Devotion, and my Friend had the good fortune to be placed very near him. The Mixture of Drugs (*alias*, Coagulated Blood) which is preserved in a transparent Glass Phial, was brought forth by a Priest or Bishop, and with great Solemnity either set down upon the Shrine, or upon an Altar close by it. As it did not immediately liquify, the Jugling Priest or Bishop took it up in his Hands more than once, pretending highly to reverence the Relick, and holding it there for a small space of time, that is to say, till the Warmth of his Hands could ferment and of course cause a Motion in the Drugs, *alias* Coagulated Blood. Nay, such is their Artifice, that sometimes the Priest assures the deluded Populace, That the Coagulated Blood  
cannot

cannot liquify till the Hereticks are drove out of the Church; and then all Protestants must immediately depart, and think themselves well off, if they fare no worse than receiving a few Blows and Knocks. In the mean while, the Priest is trying with his warm Hands to ferment and cause a Motion in the Coagulated Blood, which is no sooner perceived, than visible joy appears in all Countenances of the Congregation, just as if it served for an unanswerable proof of the Miracle. I was formerly intimate with an ingenuous as well as learned *Romanist*, who had also been an Eyewitness of this Ceremony, and indeed confessed that it was an Artificial sort of Miracle, or Piece of pure Legerdemain in his opinion. There is a Tradition (says *M. Misson*,) That St. *Januarius*, and six other *Christians*, were exposed for a Prey to Wild Beasts, but the Beasts adored, instead of devouring them. Sometime after, these seven Champions had their Heads cut off, near *Solfatarata*, in the Place where now a Church is built, and dedicated to St. *Januarius*. These Words are written on the Altar: *Locus Decollationis S. Januarii, & Sociorum ejus.*

14. I took a walk one day last Week to a pleasant Village called *Goldington*, (about a Mile from hence) on purpose to satisfy my curiosity, with the sight of a Pollard Ash-tree, which raises

not

not a little wondering among some of our Neighbours. It was lopped four or five years ago, when the Farmer to whom it belongs gave very particular order to spare that singular part, which causes so many Wonderers to visit it. The Body of it is pretty bulky, and perhaps six yards in height. All the Loppings grow on the Head or Crown of it, excepting those that are found shooting out of two pretty large Knobbs, the highest whereof is five feet or better below the Head or Crown, and the lower Knobb is somewhat above three feet directly underneath it. Out of the highest Knobb issues a Bough full as thick as my Wrist, the top of which being cut off, the remainder bows downwards in shape of a Bow, till it reaches the lower Knobb, where entering a round hole it becomes joined with it, and is now all of a piece with it, as well as with the higher Knobb. In short, this Ash-tree when it is newly lopped, resembles in some measure a Quart Pot, the bent Bough, as described, serving aptly enough for the Pot's Handle. The bent Bough has a smaller Bough, of the thickness of my Thumb, growing out of the middle of it, strait forward for four Inches in length; and then it rises directly upwards. I made what enquiry I could among the Parishioners, but could get no information of the manner in which the Bough

arriv-

arrived at its present State. However, my own thoughts upon the manner are; That some crafty Fellow did privately (first of all) cut off a good part of the Bough, and then (after boring a hole in the lower Knobb) bended down the end till it could reach to enter that same hole in which it is now so firmly fixed; or perhaps the Fellow met with a Hole ready made to his Hands, by the dying of some Bough; and a little assistance of the Bird called a Wood-pecker. We have a cheat of much the same sort in an Ash-tree, growing in my own Parish of St. *Mary*, but the Seam where the two Boughs meet, do plainly enough chalk out the contrivance: In short, they are both idle and scarce worth notice.

15. However, this puts me in mind, That thirty years ago I rode from *Oxford*, purposely to see a very noted Tree, commonly known by the name of *Gallow-Tree*, on account of the oddness of it's shape in the lower parts. Several Authors of unquestionable credit take notice of it, especially Bishop *Nicholson*, upon whose Authority I depended for its being curious: However, as I may in justice presume, it is not universally heard of by my Readers, I crave liberty to describe it as well as my parts and memory; at this great distance of time will admit of. It stands (if yet alive) on a Common, or Waste Ground on  
the



the left hand side, and not far from the Road, about four or five miles before one comes to *Reading* in *Berkshire*, being a pretty tall Beach-tree, and (was then) thicker than a Man's Body. It consists of two Stems that arise out of the ground about three yards asunder distant from each other, and that approach gradually nearer and nearer to each other, till they are about five yards in height, when they meet close together, and so, being thus united, make but one single Stalk of a considerable length. Between three and four foot beneath the part where they thus unite, there goes a piece of the live Tree, nearly resembling a Wooden Bar, almost strait across from one Stem to the other; and this is what gives it the name of Gallow-Tree. The People thereabout could assign no account how it first came to grow in that singular manner: But I am of opinion, that Art might very easily be assisting to Nature in the Affair.

16. I yesterday saw, at my Lord *Trevor's* Seat, at *Brombam*, a curiosity in Planting, which I had never before met with, tho' I believe it to be no new modern invention; *viz.* Mistletoe growing upon the main Bodies of several White-Thorn, and Apple-Trees; which was effected by the Gardiner, and in this easy, and indeed natural manner. In the middle of *February* last, he rub-

bed the proper places well over with Mistletoe Berries, till the Seeds got to some small Cracks or Crevices in the Bark, and others of them stuck very fast to even smooth places of the Bark, by assistance of the viscous matter, which grows plentifully all around them, under the white outside skin, and (Bird-lime like) will not quit them, before they have taken such good root, as to shoot out there into small Bodies and Branches. Every one knows that the Mistletoe Bird, which is of the Thrush kind, plants Mistletoe by carrying the Berries to Haw-Thorns, Oaks, Apple-trees, &c.

17. I am credibly informed, that about twenty-four years ago, as some Labourers were at work in a Gravel-pit at *Goldington*, which was fourteen foot deep, they found an Elephant's Tooth or Tusk, and some time after sold it to a Gentleman of *Cambridge*, whose Name is forgot here: Which reminds me, That at *Hawnes*, my Lord *Carteret's* Seat, about four miles from hence, I took particular notice of the upper parts of several large Faces, with monstrous great Horns upon them. They did beyond all question formerly (perhaps many Centuries ago) belong to the Beasts, called in *Sweden*, and other Northern Countries, an Elk, and were dug up out of a Morass or Bog in *Ireland*. Now I would willingly

lingly be informed, how these Horns came deposited there; for I do not remember I ever heard, that Elks were Natives of *Ireland*. I may also in reason ask, how and in what manner the Elephant's Tooth or Tusk could creep fourteen foot deep into the Gravel-pit at *Goldington*? Though I dare not presume myself to determine the Case, I am sensible, that many Persons in good reputation for judgment will insist, That they have lien buried ever since the Universal Deluge. Be it so: I must, notwithstanding, take liberty to relate the following Passage, as it really happened, *viz.* When I lived at *Burgh*, in the Marsh, in *Lincolnshire*, I went in company of some Neighbours to visit a Friend about three miles off, upon the edge of the Fenns, and three miles distant from the Sea-side. We found him busily employed in digging for a Well of Water, in order to fix a Pump. The Labourers having got to the depth of twenty-five foot, picked up there an old rusty Iron Head of an Arrow, which caused immediately a sturdy question to arise among us; namely, How and in what manner came it thither? One of our company ventured to make a pretty bold sort of conjecture, *viz.* That many hundreds of years ago, the place where we then dined might be all Sea, (the Land even at this day gaining ground in some places and

lofeing as much in others upon that Coast) and that a *Roman* Veffel of War failing along over it, one of the Mariners or Soldiers did by fome accident drop it over-board ; upon which it of courfe funk to the bottom, where it lay unfought for and unmolested, till my Friend's Labourers met with it. But alas ! an accident which happened that very afternoon, put an end to the conjecture, and feemed to point out the manner wherein it came thither. The Workmen, inftead of digging down fopeways (as they ought to have done,) dug directly down in a perpendicular line, which confequently caufed the clayifh Sides to crack and calve in. This calving was fo very gradual and gentle, that they had all time enough to efcape out fafely ; though the Bucket wherein the Earth was drawn up, (as well as part of the Rope tied to it) was buried at the bottom. By this time my Friend was grown weary of his project, and fo ordered the Hole to be immediately filled up again. Now perhaps, forty or fifty years hence, when this affair is entirely forgotten, another Owner of the Place may dig for a Well there ; and when the Bucket and piece of Rope are difcovered, who knows but that they may be pronounced *Roman*, and as a rare curiofity fent, either to Dr. *Woodward's*

Col.

Collection, at *Cambridge*, or else to the *Musæum Ashmoleanum* at *Oxford*?

18. I ought (in my First Letter) to have informed you, that the Cluster of roundish Shells about as big as my fist, which are cemented and grown together, was picked up among the Rocks and Sand at *Black Rock Point*, that is to say; about half way between the Pond and *Charles Town*, at *Nevis*. They are Barnacle Shells, and were washed off some Rock in the Sea, and thrown ashore in a Storm or Hurricane: They stick fast to Ships bottoms too, when they grow foul, which they soon do in sultry Latitudes. A Barnacle is no other than a Sea Worm; and now pray, What became of these Black-Rock Sea Worms? Did they perish as soon as out of their Element on the dry Shore? Did they prudentially creep back into the Sea, to look out for a new rocky Settlement? or did they turn into Geese, Ducks, &c. and so mount up into the Air? I am satisfied, That all the most positive stories about the *Scotch* Barnacles are fabulous; for I see no reason why *Scotland* should be blessed, above other Countries, with such a genial Warmth, as will turn Worms into Geese, Ducks, &c. These Geese may feed on *Barnacles* in *Scotland*; and in this sense Barnacles may be said to turn into Geese among the *Orcades*. N. B. That in *Octo-*

ber 1721, I saw the skin of a *Soland* Goose stuffed, at *Don Saltero's* Coffee-House, in *Chelsea*; it was considerably less than our *English* ones, and flat-bodied, not round, to the best of my remembrance.

*I am, Good Sir,*

*Your assured Friend,*

W. Smith.

## L E T T E R XI.

*Dear Sir,*

**I** Last night transcribed, verbatim, the following Article from *Ireland*, out of the *London Evening Post*, viz. “ Yesterday, there being  
 “ a Spring-Tide, a vast army of Porpusses came  
 “ up at *Lough Foyl*, in pursuit of our Salmon :  
 “ As they rolled by *Londonderry*, the Sailors pursued them in their Boats, and killing them all  
 “ the way, drove them six miles farther up the  
 “ *Lough* to the Flatts, about Mount *Gaveling* ;  
 “ there a new Chase began by our Fishermen and  
 “ the Country People, who stretched a great Net  
 “ across the *Lough*, and drove them up to the  
 “ narrow passages of the great Island, which lies  
 “ a mile below this Town ; there they all fell  
 “ on them pell-mell with Guns, Swords, Hatchets, and all kinds of Weapons, and made a terrible slaughter : There were killed here above  
 “ an hundred and sixty, besides as many more  
 “ which were mortally wounded, and carried off  
 “ by the Flood ; including those the *Londonderry*  
 “ Men killed, there have at least fallen in this battle five hundred Porpusses, generally weighing

“ from a thousand to fifteen hundred Weight,  
 “ and very good for Oyl. Some of them were  
 “ full of Young ones as big as Calves, and some  
 “ had from half a dozen to half a score Salmon  
 “ in their Stomachs: But we hope, That since  
 “ these grand Devourers are destroyed, our Fish-  
 “ ing Trade will hereafter flourish, and we are  
 “ pretty well repaid by their Oyl, for the Da-  
 “ mage they have done.” I could heartily wish,  
 that the Author of this relation had thoroughly  
 explained himself in the above written Words,  
 viz. *Some of them were full of Young ones, as big  
 as Calves*: For I fancy, he would then have as-  
 serted (as I do in Letter eight, Paragraph twenty-  
 six) That Whales, Sharks, Grampusses, Porpus-  
 ses, and other huge Leviathans of the Ocean,  
 do never Spawn, but that they propagate their  
 several Species like Brute Beasts of the Field,  
 breeding their Young ones in a regular Matrix.  
 Surely the Surgeons and Apothecaries of *London-  
 derry*, are a very incurious set of People, if they  
 did not regularly open some few of them, in or-  
 der to oblige the inquisitive part of Mankind  
 with an exact account of the *Matrix*, *Ovaria*,  
 and *Fœtus* of the Female, as also of the *Penis*, &c.  
 of the Male Porpus. Or, if these young Porpus-  
 ses went into the Maw of the old ones, purely to  
 prey upon such Salmon as they found there, (just  
 as young Sharks do in the *West Indies*) the Au-  
thor



thor ought to have informed us of it, if it had come under his Cognizance.

2. Now, that all Species of Animals whatever consist of both Male and Female, is what I suppose no body will offer to deny, for fear of his Understanding's being called in question; though their various methods of Copulation, Breeding, and Bringing-forth, are not so perfectly and easily discovered. But alas! those refined Gentlemen who are for carrying this nice Point farther still, by insisting that the same will hold true as to the Vegetable World; they are for the most part, if not always mistaken. *Maximilian Misson*, (in vol. 4. page 398.) tells us, That he saw in the Garden of Simples, at *Pisa*, in *Italy*, a Male and a Female Palm-tree planted together, agreeably to the ancient Error of those, who thought such a Marriage was necessary, in order to make those Trees fruitful. "But this is a  
 " meer Fable, (adds he;) for I observed a Palm-  
 " tree alone full of Dates, at the *Villa Madome*  
 " on *Mount Mario*, near *Rome*." I have had the same truth confirmed to me, by such of my Acquaintance, as have had the good fortune to make the agreeable Tour of *Italy*, who (with him too) unanimously allow, that they are scarce enough in *Italy*, and that they very seldom bear Fruit. *Ab. Seller* (in chap. 3. of his curious and critical History of *Palmyra*) praises highly the Dates of  
*Syria*,

*Syria*, where they abound; and quotes *Strabo*, who affirms, That the Country about the River *Euphrates*, produces great quantities of Barley, but that the want of all other things was supplied by their Palm-trees; that That single Tree afforded the Inhabitants both Wine and Vinegar, Honey and Mead; and out of it they wove their Cloaths: The Shells serve the Smiths for Fire; and when you have soaked the Shells in Water, you may feed your Cattle, your Oxen and Sheep with them: And it is reported, that there is a *Persic* Poem, which enumerates three hundred and sixty uses (one for every day of the old year) of the Palm-tree. In some places of *Arabia* they are perfumed: And those in *Syria*, as they are most beautiful to the Eye, so they are of a most delicious taste to the Palate. Now, as *Ab. Seller* was a Person of such a communicative Nature, as well as great Reading and Curiosity, it would have been wondrous strange, if he had believed that (according to *Pliny* and other mistaken Authors) there had been both Male and Female Palm-trees, he should not have given us a hint or two of so singular a fact. In short; I know of no Male Fruit Tree of any kind; for in mine, and indeed all other Gardens that I ever visited, Apple-trees, Pear-trees, Orange-trees, Tamarind-trees, Plumb-trees, Apricock-trees, Peach-trees, &c. do all yield (some more, some less) their peculiar

culiar Sorts of Fruit; however, I do not remember one single instance to the contrary, either here at home in *England*, or in the *Leeward Charribee* Islands: Or suppose there to be a few instances to the contrary, Pray what Conclusions can we draw therefrom, to support so gross an Error? Surely none at all.

3. Dr. *Paten*, of *Nevis*, a Person of good Learning, strong natural Parts, and untainted Veracity, was brought up at the University of *Aberdeen*, and had (as a Ship Surgeon) made three Voyages to *India*; In one of which they touched (to the best of my remembrance) upon the Coast of *Bengal*, where he saw a very extraordinary kind of Rarity; *viz.* an *Indian* Brachman, who by Charm or Enchantment undertook to quell the fierce and savage temper even of Crocodiles, so far as to oblige them to come out of the Water quite tame and inoffensive. He went, in company of some Sailors, who had been there about two years before, to visit the old Brachman at his Hut, which was situate in a retired lonesome place in the Wild Country, and not far from a Pond, close to which he had contrived a Room of Entertainment (of about thirty foot square, with Benches in it) by hanging Matting to some spreading Ever-green Trees, that (by a little help from the Sea Breezes) rendered it wondrous cool and refreshing in so sultry a Climate.

After

After a short conversation had with him, he conducted them to this pleasant shaded Room, and desired them to sit down, and not to stir. Dr. *Paten* sat close by the Brachman, who pulled out a Book, and read therein, mumbling to himself, the Characters being all *Indian*, and of course unknown to my Friend. He had not long done so, before up comes a Crocodile about three foot in length, and walked quietly enough till he came up to him, where he stood still for a while till the *Indian* Brachman had gently stroaked him, and then after taking a Tour round the Room, returned back to the Pond. The Brachman began to read a second time, and quickly after comes up another Crocodile about seven foot long, which behaved in the same civil manner with the former, before he returned back to the Pond. The Brachman read a little the third time, and up comes a third Crocodile, that the Doctor guessed might be twelve foot long; This huge Monster terrified him heartily, but however did him no hurt, excepting a heavy stroak on the Shins, with his Tail-end; as he turned round to go back again to the Pond. They all immediately accompanied the old *Indian* back to his Hut; where he gave them some Fruit to carry with them on board the Ship, and for which (as well as for his Conjuring) they made him a small Present. The Doctor was glad enough that he

got so safely off then; but could never be prevailed on, to venture on another such curious Visit. The Sailors, are a very superstitious set of People; for these were firmly persuaded, that the Brachman performed this Feat by dint of pure Charm or Enchantment. But alas! it is easily accounted for in the following manner, without recourse to Conjunction, *viz.* He had caught them on the Bank of some River, when they were very young, carried them Home to the Pond-side in his Room, fed them at certain particular times in the day, suffered them by degrees to accustom themselves to the Pond, out of which they soon naturally came up at the usually hour of being fed. And this pretty plainly shows itself; For the old Brachman would be spoke with but at one certain Hour of the Day. In short; all Animals whatever may be tamed, provided they are caught whilst young enough for that purpose, agreeably to the Words of St. *James*, (chap. 3. ver. 7.) *For every kind of Beasts, and of Birds, and of Serpents, and things in the the Sea, is tamed, and hath been tamed of Mankind.*

4. The Brachman was artful enough, though (I think) his Skill was far short of our Countryman's at *Bristol*, who (no longer ago than in the year 1719 or 1720,) taught a Dog to speak as articulately as Men usually do. There are (no doubt)

doubt) many thousands now alive, who were Eye-witnesſes to the fact: I have diſcourſed with at leaſt twenty of them (Perſons of good credit) and they all agree in every particular circumſtance. Nay, I have an intimate Acquaintance, who laſt year went to *Briſtol* on purpoſe to drink the Waters, and enquired after the Dog, which has been dead ſome years; However, the People ſatiſfied him of the Truth of this Relation. The Dog's Name was *Fox*, and what is pretty remarkable, he reſembled a Fox both in ſhape and colour. When his Maſter firſt began to teach him, he was forced to put his Fingers to the Dog's Wind-Pipe till he half throtled him, and alſo beat him. But as *Fox* learned his Leſſons, theſe were by degrees left off, till at laſt he ſpoke articulately without ſuch cruel uſage: However, I muſt take notice, That he could never utter a Word without pre-viously ſaying the Letter O; For inſtance, If his Maſter asked him a Queſtion, which obliged him to pronounce the word *Judge*, by way of anſwer, then the Dog would immediately ſay, O *Judge*, *Judge*, *Judge*. He was expert in ſpeaking ſeveral other ſuch ſhort things which have now ſlipped my memory. But had the *Briſtol* Man lived in the darkeſt times of Popery, and taught *Fox* in private, perhaps both Maſter and Dog might have been publickly burnt for Diabolical Practices. Or had they even ventured

tured to play their Tricks within the Liberties of the good City of *London*, I suppose some wise Grand Jury of *Middlesex*, in those loyal times, would have zealously presented to the Court the aforefaid Master, as one who being moved by the Malice and Instigation of the Devil, did excite and cause the said Dog *Fox*, to utter frequently (in all sorts of Company) certain Seditious and Traiterous Words, tending to excite his Majesty's Leige Subjects to Rebellion, in order to subvert our present happy Establishment. I many years ago read a Treatise that was intended to prove the Rationality of Brutes, done by Monsieur *Charron*, who takes great pains, and indeed quotes many grave Authors, in order to prove his assertion. We all know what surprizing things have been effected by Elephants, Horses, and Dogs, who are trained up with that design: And for my own part, I am persuaded that they all have an inferior sort of Reason, to which you are at liberty to appropriate the plausible Title of Instinct, or any other such kind of Name as is now in vogue with the Learned World.

5. I should have informed you, in Letter the 2<sup>d</sup>, Paragraph the 29<sup>th</sup>, that the Spoon-Bill is a very large dunnish coloured Bird, and is so called because its Bill resembles a Spoon; that Noddies too are as large, and much of the same Colour; that Boobies also are large as well as of a dunnish Colour;

Colour ; and that, if one of these last alights (as they now and then do) upon a Ship's Yard-Arm, it will stand there till a Sailor can climb up and catch it with his hands, it all the while pecking and screaming out, but not offering to fly away, which deservedly gained for it the name of Booby. We have a small rocky Island between the Windward part of *Nevis*, and the Windward part of *St. Christopher's*, called *Booby Island*, from their building Nests upon it. *N. B.* I was never very close to any of these Birds. The Women of *Anguilla* (an inconsiderable Island, scarce a Day's Sail Leeward from *Nevis*) do customarily go once a year to another less and barren Island, (called *Prickle Pear*, because nothing else will grow thereon,) in order to strip the Birds of their Feathers, which poor Creatures are so simple as to suffer the Women to knock them down with Sticks as they fly about : It is somewhat strange, that repeated experience does not teach them wit enough to keep farther off from such dangerous Enemies. I twice sailed along close by this Island, in both of which times I saw vast numbers of these Birds (that were seemingly bigger than Pigeons) hovering about it ; I do not remember their Name. None of the above-mentioned kinds of Birds are eatable. *N. B.* *Anguilla* is so called, because it is a long narrow Island, resembling the form of a Snake.



6. About two months before I left the *West-Indies*, I took a little trip up to *Antigua*, which is a fine Island, though it has not one single Spring of Water in it: And as it was in a time of great drowth, the whole face of the Country looked dismally enough. All their Ponds were then quite dry, and their Cisterns almost empty; so that they were obliged to fetch their fresh Water from *Guardaloupe*, a *French* Island, and *Montserrat*, an *English* one, which was afterwards sold for Eighteen Pence a Pail-full. The Capital is called *St. John's*; and is by far the most regular Town I saw in the *West Indies*, close to the Houses whereof is the best and most commodious Harbour, belonging to our *English* Leeward Islands: They were then building a stately Church, which I since hear is compleatly finished; and I am satisfied is the finest Building of the kind by much, we have under the Government. And as for the Inhabitants, they (like our other Settlements) were remarkable for Hospitality and Civility to Strangers. Their Produce is the same with that of *Nevis*: But, as they want a great Mountain, they can have no Asparagus, very few Cucumbers, and not so much plenty of Garden-growth in other kinds. I was lately assured by an *Antigua* Gentleman, That they have very fine Prawns, a Fish not met with at *Nevis*.

He also told me, that they eat with singular pleasure a small Land-Crab, the Shell of whose Body is not broader than a Crown Piece, and which is entirely neglected at *Nevis*, because we have great plenty of the larger sort. At *Nevis* we have some diminutive Soal-Fishes which taste exactly like *English* ones. The best prospect of *Antigua*, is from a Hill in the middle almost of the Country.

7. In my return back homewards to *Nevis*, we called in at *Montserrat*, where too the Gentlemen delight to signalize themselves in Hospitality, and all Acts of Kindness and Good Nature. The Country is mountainous; and one third of the People Papists, who are notwithstanding allowed to bear Arms, serve upon Juries, and to do their Country's service in all other respects the same with the Protestants. You cannot in reason expect a fuller account of these two Isles, my stay at them being so short as ten or twelve days at the first, and at the latter no more than two. *Montserrat* on the Leeward or Western Side, must needs afford a fair Prospect after a plentiful Shower of Rain, it being much higher Land than *Antigua*.

8. Between *Montserrat* and *Nevis*, we passed by a finall rocky Isle named *Rodondo*, which has

no other Inhabitants besides a few Goats. The Island *St. Bartholomew*, is settled by us *English*, but is not considerable, except for *Lignum Vitæ* and Iron Wood. The *Dutch* Island of *Eustachia*, being wondrous regularly marked out into Sugar Cane Fields, looked delightfully as I sailed along by it in 1718: But the Small Pox being very rife there then, and some of our Company having never been visited with that Sickness, which is always reckoned to be vastly dangerous to Life in so hot a Clime, we durst not venture to go on shore, to my singular regret. *Saba* is another *Dutch* Island but a little way from it: It is a monstrously great, steep, and high Rock, sprinkled over with a thin Coat of Earth on the top, and inhabited by fifty or sixty Families: No more than one Person at a time can climb up to it, and that with difficulty enough, as well as but at one place, so that it is absolutely impregnable to all Enemies. *Curracoa* too, is a *Dutch* Island of good note for Trade, and well fortified; its situation is about two day's sail to the Leeward of *Nevis*, but I was never at it. The Island of *Nevis* is of a round figure; and *St. Christopher's* is not unlike *Italy*, i. e. its Shape is much in the form of a Man's Leg.

9. I forgot to acquaint you, That in a bright and clear Day, we can from *Nevis* very distinct-

ly perceive the feveral Iflands of *Eufachia*, *Saba*, *St. Bartholomew*, *Antigua*, *Guardaloupe*, *Montfer-rat*, *Rodondo*, and *St. Christopher's*, with an un-bounded Proſpect (on all ſides) of the *Atlantick* Ocean. When I took leave of it on my return Home to my Native Country, ſome refreshing Rains had made the whole face of the Earth look ſo verdant and ſmiling, that no other part of the Globe which I have as yet ſeen, could afford a richer gratification of its kind, than was that Quarter of our Iſland which we beheld from on board our Ship in the Bay. For *Charles Town* lies ſtretched out along the bottom of the Bay, cloſe to the Sea-ſide. Above it, upon the riſing grounds, and alſo on both ſides of it for about four or five Miles in the whole breadth, were fine Plantations of Green Sugar-Canes, Orchards of Orange-Trees, as big as our *Engliſh* Apple-Trees, &c. Higher ſtill, were innumerable tall Trees (or Woods conſiſting of Palmetto and other charming Ever-Greens) in the utmoſt perfection. Highteſt of all, up ſprung the verdurous Mountain-top, not unlike a thick Sugar-loaf. And not far from it, on the South-ſide, ſtood *Saddle Hill*: A Hill we term it, tho' here it might well paſs for a Mountain. A delightful, lovely ſight indeed! eſpecially to me, who had received ſo many Civilities from almoſt every Gentleman dwelling there. An eaſy Gale of Wind from the Eaſt, waſted us ſmoothly

smoothly out of the Bay into the wide Ocean : But I kept my Eyes fixed upon the dear Country, till Night spread out her sable Curtains, and hid it for ever from me. I then sighed, dropt a few tears, and said, *Farewell, happy Isle!*

*N. B.* As the Holes under our Sugar-Coppers are all on the Western-side of our Boyling-houses, so during Crop-time when they have a fire in them, they must of course cast a dazzling show in the Night, towards the Bay. It is an observation of all Persons who sail from *Antigua* to *Nevis*, That when they get as far as the small rocky Island of *Rodondo*, they are most highly gratified with a charming Prospect of that quarter of *Nevis* called *Gingerland*, it being the Eastern Parish of the Country, and of course, not to be seen at all from the Bay at *Charles Town*. *Windward* Parish too exhibits a most beautiful Land-skip to such as sail by on that side of the Island. I often thought it a thousand pities, that Pepper, Clove, Cinnamon, and Nutmeg-Trees, were not long ago transplanted from the *East-Indies*, to the *Leeward Islands*; for then *England* might have been supplied with those Spices at a far cheaper rate, than by purchasing them of the *Dutch*. I should imagine it no difficult task, to send three or four Ships very privately to *India* for that purpose, *viz.* to bring away large quantities of their

several Fruits ripe, which would of course be fit to be put in the Ground, when they arrive at the *West-Indies*, as likewise as many of the smallest young Trees, with the Earth about them, as the Ships could find room for, in Boxes. And for the farther encouragement of Publick Spirit; let us remember, that Coffee does now thrive pretty well in the *West-Indies*, though formerly the Planters knew nothing of it, and that it would moreover prove a most advantageous Voyage, because the *West-India* Gentleman would stick at no price in purchasing them. The *Dutch* would (no doubt) try all methods to prevent such a project from succeeding; but there are other Islands besides their Settlements, where they might be had effectually, if the Expedition was kept a secret for some time: For instance, Nutmegs might be had at *Bouton*, where they grow. One Mr. *Powers*, (a *Cantabrigian*) who was a Predecessor of mine, in the Rectory of St. *John's* at *Nevis*, wrote a Poem called, *The Sugar-Cane*, which was looked upon there as a curious Work, and as such (after his death) sent home hither to his Relations: But I believe it was never printed, for at my return to *England*, I made a particular enquiry after it of Mr. *Rivington*, by St. *Paul's* Church-yard, and of many other *London* Book-sellers, but in vain. However, the Subject was  
a Field

a Field noble enough for the finest of Poets to expatiate upon.

10. I cannot say, That I am well satisfied, with either the *Ptolemaic* or *Copernican* System: And as for *Tycho Brahe*; far better Judges than myself are of opinion, that unfurmountable Difficulties may be easily raised against his Hypothesis, though he is so presumptuous as to aim at accounting for the Errors of both the others. I find no small fault with every one of the Theories of the Earth, that I have as yet seen, though I profess myself very far from being duly qualified to correct those Faults. And upon the whole, I think I do espy a most superlative Pride in all Authors, who attempt to unwind that mysterious Clew of Divine Providence, which perhaps nothing less than Infinite Wisdom (its first Contriver) is able to comprehend. In fine; wonderful are all the Councils and Ways of the Ever-glorious God, Omnipotent, and All-wise! Foolish are the subtlest Machinations, and the cunningest Devices of poor mortal Man's projecting Heart! However; since they do not injure my Faith as a sound Christian, I now and then take a little pleasure by inspecting into, and examining their shallow Depths as far as my short line of Understanding will possibly reach. But still, I am so

cautious, as to reserve to myself full liberty either to admit of, or to reject all, or any of their Works, though offered to publick view, and patronized by Persons the most eminent for Learning and Natural Parts; ever bearing in mind the Angel *Raphael's* Answer to *Adam*, our general Sire, when he earnestly expressed his longing to be informed of such high, abstruse Matters; *Milton*, book 8. line 66,

*To ask or search I blame thee not, for Heav'n  
Is as the Book of God before thee set,  
Wherein to read his wond'rous Works, and learn  
His Scafons, Hours, or Days, or Months, or Years:  
This to attain, whether Heav'n move or Earth,  
Imports not, if thou reckon right, the rest  
From Man or Angel the great Architect  
Did wisely to conceal, and not divulge  
His Secrets, to be scann'd by them who ought  
Rather admire; or if they list to try  
Conjecture. He his Fabrick of the Heav'n's  
Hath left to their disputes, perhaps to move  
His laughter at their quaint opinions wide,  
Hereafter, when they come to model Heav'n  
And calculate the Stars, how they will wield  
The mighty Frame, how build, unbuild, contrive  
To save appearances, how gird the Sphere  
With Centric and Eccentric scribled o'er,*

*Cycle*



*Cycle and Epicycle, Orb in Orb :*  
*Already by thy reasoning this I guess,*  
*Who art to lead thy Offspring, and supposest*  
*That Bodies bright and greater should not serve*  
*The less not bright, nor Heav'n such journies run,*  
*Earth sitting still, when she alone receives*  
*The benefit : consider first, that Great*  
*Or Bright infers not Excellence : The Earth*  
*Though, in comparison of Heaven, so small,*  
*Nor glistening may of solid Good contain*  
*More plenty than the Sun that barren shines,*  
*Whose virtue on itself works no effect,*  
*But in the fruitful Earth ; there first receiv'd*  
*His beams, unactive else, their vigour find.*  
*Yet not to Earth are those bright Luminaries*  
*Officious, but to thee Earth's inhabitant.*  
*And for the Heaven's wide circuit, let it speak*  
*The Maker's high Magnificence, who built*  
*So spacious, and his line stretch'd out so far,*  
*That Man may know he dwells not in his own ;*  
*An Edifice too large for him to fill,*  
*Lodg'd in a small partition, and the rest*  
*Ordain'd for uses to his Lord best known.*  
*The swiftness of those Circles attribute,*  
*Though numberless, to his Omnipotence*  
*That to corporeal Substances could add*  
*Speed almost spiritual ; me thou think'st not slow,*  
*Who since the Morning hour set out from Heaven*  
*Where*

*Where God resides, and e'er mid-day arriv'd  
 In Eden, distance inexpressible  
 By numbers that have name. But this I urge,  
 Admitting motion in the Heav'ns, to shew  
 Invalid that which thee to doubt it mov'd;  
 Not that I so affirm, though so it seem  
 To thee who hast thy dwelling here on Earth.  
 God to remove his ways from human sense,  
 Plac'd Heaven from Earth so far, that earthly sight  
 If it presume, might err in things too high,  
 And no advantage gain. What if the Sun  
 Be Center to the World, and other Stars  
 By his attractive Virtue and their own  
 Invited, dance about him various rounds?  
 Their wand'ring course now high, now low, then hid,  
 Progressive, Retrograde, or standing still,  
 In six thou seest; and what if sev'nth to these  
 The Planet Earth, so stedfast though she seem,  
 Insensibly three different motions move?  
 Which else to several Spheres thou must ascribe  
 Mov'd contrary with thwart obliquities,  
 Or save the Sun his labour, and that swift  
 Nocturnal and diurnal Rhomb suppos'd,  
 Invisible else above all Stars, the wheel  
 Of Day and Night; which needs not thy belief,  
 If Earth industrious of herself fetch Day  
 Travelling East, and with her part averse  
 From the Sun's beam meet Night, her other part  
 Still*

*Still luminous by his Ray. What if that light  
Sent from her through the wide transpicious Air,  
To the Terrestrial Moon be as a Star  
Enlight'ning her by day, as she by night  
This Earth; reciprocal, if Land be there,  
Fields, and Inhabitants: Her Spots thou seest  
As Clouds, and Clouds may rain, and rain produce  
Fruits in her soften'd Soil, for some to eat  
Allotted there; and other Suns perhaps  
With their attendant Moons thou wilt descry  
Communicating Male and Female Light,  
Which two great Sexes animate the World,  
Stor'd in each orb perhaps with those that live.  
For such vast room in Nature unpossess'd  
By living Soul, desert and desolate,  
Only to shine, yet scarce to contribute  
Each Orb a glimpse of Light, convey'd so far  
Down to this habitable, which returns  
Light back to them, is obvious to dispute.  
But whether thus these things, or whether not,  
Whether the Sun predominant in Heav'n  
Rise on the Earth, or Earth rise on the Sun  
He from the East his flaming road begin,  
Or she from West her silent course advance  
With inoffensive pace that spinning sleeps  
On her soft Axle, while she paces ev'n  
And bears thee soft with the smooth Air along,  
Sollicit not thy Thoughts with matter hid,*

*Leave*

*Leave them to God above, him serve and fear ;  
 Of other Creatures, as him pleases best,  
 Wherever plac'd, let him dispose : joy thou  
 In what he gives to thee, this Paradise  
 And thy fair Eve ; Heav'n is for thee too high  
 For thee to know what passes there ; be lowly wise :  
 Think only what concerns thee and thy Being ;  
 Dream not of other Worlds, what Creatures there  
 Live, in what state, condition or degree  
 Contented that thus far hath been revealed  
 Not of Earth only but of highest Heav'n.*

I cannot help taking particular notice of the eight last lines of our great blind Poet, and find in me a ready disposition, to cry out with Zophar, (*Job* 11. 7.) *Canst thou by searching find out God? Canst thou find out the Almighty unto perfection? It is as high as Heaven, what canst thou do? Deeper than Hell, what canst thou know? The measure thereof is longer than the Earth, and broader than the Sea.* And alas! Notwithstanding such a powerful discouragement, vain Man covets at least to be thought wise. In plain; Humility is an excellent Virtue, and yet we are all proud enough: Nay, there may be, and indeed often is a great deal of secret Pride, in the very fairest pretences to Humility. I shall finish this  
 Article

Article with observing, That nothing does more easily puff up our empty bladder of vanity, than weak Human Literature: Nay, sometimes a poor pittance, or even pretended share of it, will suffice for that purpose, though at the same time it is well known, that the wisest *Solomon* of our Age, cannot assign a tolerable Reason, why Grass should be green, or why Flowers should be variegated into so many beautiful, enamelled Colours.

11. My dear Friend, Farewell! And I wish I could for ever bid adieu to this bewitching sin of Pride, that haunts me like an Evil Genius: But that (I fear) is much too difficult a task for me to overcome; for yesterday morning, it would fain have tempted me to begin another Letter; and it certainly would have succeeded, had not a Verse in the first Lesson for Evening Service determined me to the contrary, *viz.* *Ecclesiastes* xii. 12. *Of making many Books there is no end, and much Study is a weariness of the Flesh.* I should not be easily tired by continuing longer in this Epistolatory way of Correspondence; but am fully convinced, that my Faculty of Writing on, would not soon terminate, because a Person whose Talent lies in this Vein, has an inexhaustible

ble Fund to work upon, which in the end must however quite weary him out. I am sufficiently admonished to conclude by subscribing myself,

*Your sincere Friend,*

W. Smith.

# I N D E X.

## A.

Page

<i>ALLIGATORS</i> —————	235
<i>Angling in Black-Rock Pond</i> —————	10
<i>Anguilla Island</i> —————	304
<i>Antigua Island</i> —————	305
<i>Ants</i> —————	204
<i>Apples of Sodom</i> —————	28
<i>Arrow-head under ground</i> —————	29
<i>Asbestos</i> —————	110
<i>Asparagus</i> —————	192

## B.

<i>Barnacles</i> —————	30
<i>Bartholomew Island</i> —————	8
<i>Bath at Nevis</i> —————	55
<i>Bath-Plain Plantation</i> —————	87
<i>Batts</i> —————	51
<i>Beef, Mutton, &amp;c.</i> —————	209, 210
<i>Bees, wild</i> —————	191
<i>Birds</i> —————	51
<i>Ibid.</i> —————	303
<i>Bonny Boatman</i> —————	130
<i>Bull-Dogs</i> —————	217

## C.

<i>Cabbage-Trees</i> —————	252
<i>Ibid.</i> —————	43
	<i>Cape</i>

# I N D E X.

	Page
<i>Calcutture</i> .....	188
<i>Callebass Trees</i> .....	33
<i>Cape de Verd Islands</i> .....	200
<i>Cassada Bread</i> .....	101
<i>Cassia Fistula Tree</i> .....	26
<i>Cataract</i> .....	142
<i>Cavally Fish</i> .....	2
<i>Cedar white</i> .....	203
<i>Centipee</i> .....	97
<i>Cherokee-Indians</i> .....	72
<i>Cherry, Cashew</i> .....	30
<i>Chianne</i> .....	32
<i>Chigoes</i> .....	99
<i>China, Great Wall of</i> .....	175
<i>Christal</i> .....	183
<i>Ibid.</i> .....	38
<i>Christopher Island</i> .....	22
<i>Citrons</i> .....	237
<i>Cock Roach</i> .....	196
<i>Cockle Shells</i> .....	2, 9
<i>Cocks, Game</i> .....	217
<i>Coco</i> .....	45
<i>Cocoa</i> .....	46
<i>Copenhagen</i> .....	135
<i>Copernicus, Ptolomy, Tycho Brahe</i> .....	311
<i>Coppers, the Devil's</i> .....	48
<i>Coral</i> .....	16
<i>Cornua Ammonis</i> .....	20
<i>Cotton</i> .....	23
<i>Crabs on Land</i> .....	16
<i>Ibid.</i> .....	210
<i>Cray-fishes at Chianne</i> .....	17



# I N D E X.

	Page
<i>Crebougá</i> .....	232
<i>Crocodiles, Tame</i> .....	299
<i>Cronslot Castle</i> .....	149
<i>Cucumbers prickly</i> .....	208
<i>Curracoa Island</i> .....	8

## D.

<i>Decyphering</i> .....	253
<i>Dendrites</i> .....	161
<i>Didledoo Trees</i> .....	193
<i>Divers of Weymouth</i> .....	13
<i>Dog speaking</i> .....	312
<i>Dog-wood Bark</i> .....	3
<i>Dolphin</i> .....	18
<i>Ibid.</i> .....	216
<i>Doves, Ground</i> .....	<i>ibid.</i>
<i>Dropsy</i> .....	68
<i>Ducks, Mungrel</i> .....	198

## E.

<i>Earthquakes at Nevis</i> .....	59, 60, 61, 62, 63.
<i>Ede</i> .....	250.
<i>Eel, cold, at Surinam</i> .....	100.
<i>Elephants Tooth at Goldington</i> .....	209
<i>Elks Horns, at Hawnes</i> .....	290
<i>Elfsneur in Denmark</i> .....	134.
<i>England, formerly joined to France</i> .....	66.
<i>Eustachia Island</i> .....	67.

# INDEX.

## F.

	Page
<i>Fire, Greek</i> .....	278
<i>Fishes in Black-Rock Pond</i> .....	59
<i>Fishes, Flying</i> .....	186
<i>Fishes, Sea</i> .....	3
<i>Fishes, Golden</i> .....	201
<i>Fish, Hunting</i> .....	3
<i>Flamingo Bird</i> .....	236
<i>Frogs</i> .....	244
<i>Fruits</i> .....	67, 70
<i>Ibid.</i> .....	29

## G.

<i>Garden in the Woods</i> .....	29, 32
<i>Garden, Produce</i> .....	37
<i>Geese, Ducks, &amp;c.</i> .....	221
<i>Ginger</i> .....	206
<i>Grampus</i> .....	198
<i>Ground, hot at Sulphur Gut</i> .....	55
<i>Guana's</i> .....	85
<i>Gulph Weed</i> .....	187
<i>Gum Alymnæ</i> .....	25

## H.

<i>Hecla, a Vulcano</i> .....	128
<i>Heat at Nevis</i> .....	239
<i>Hesperides</i> .....	207
<i>Humming Birds</i> .....	194
<i>Hurricane</i> .....	240

# I N D E X.

## J.

	Page
<i>Januarius Saint, his Blood</i> _____	284
<i>Jessamine</i> _____	203
<i>Indico</i> _____	206

## L.

<i>Ladies skin their Faces</i> _____	30
<i>Library at Charles Town</i> _____	213
<i>Lightning without Thunder</i> _____	190
<i>Liquorish Bush</i> _____	194
<i>Lizards</i> _____	85
<i>Lizards Tail cut off, grows again</i> _____	180
<i>Lobsters, poisonous</i> _____	17

## M.

<i>Mael-stroom</i> _____	132
<i>Manchineel Apple-Tree</i> _____	25
<i>Manchineel Stick, turns Milk</i> _____	244
<i>Misson, upon Shells</i> _____	162
<i>Mistletoe</i> _____	289
<i>Montferrat Island</i> _____	7
<i>Moon Fish</i> _____	9
<i>Mountain at Nevis</i> _____	64
_____ <i>at St. Christopher's</i> _____	22
<i>Mud Fish</i> _____	3
<i>Mulatto Child</i> _____	231
<i>Mullet's Fat</i> _____	219
<i>Musick in a Garden</i> _____	29
_____ <i>of Lizards</i> _____	89

# I N D E X.

Page

## N.

<i>Nankin Porcelain Tower</i> —————	175
<i>Narva</i> —————	135
<i>Negroes</i> —————	225
<i>Nevis, why the Mother Island</i> —————	223
<i>Nevis, Prospect</i> —————	308

## O.

<i>Oysters, upon Mangrove-tree Roots</i> —————	210
--	-----

## P.

<i>Pagod</i> —————	177
<i>Palm-Tree</i> —————	297
<i>Parrots</i> —————	237
<i>Patellæ Shells</i> —————	5
<i>Pelican</i> —————	195
<i>Pigeons</i> —————	51
<i>Pimento</i> —————	25
<i>Pinna Marina</i> —————	236
<i>Polypus, an Aquatick Insect</i> —————	179
<i>Porpusses</i> —————	185
<i>Ibid.</i> —————	295
<i>Port-Royal, an Earthquake there</i> —————	62
<i>Prawns</i> —————	666
<i>Presentation and Sallery at Nevis</i> —————	213, 214.

## R.

<i>Rats eaten at Jamaica</i> —————	209
<i>Redondo</i> —————	306
	<i>Revel</i>

# I N D E X.

	Page
<i>Revel Town</i> —————	148
<i>Rum</i> —————	238

## S.

<i>Saba Island</i> —————	307
<i>Sage Bush</i> —————	192
<i>Salt Pond</i> —————	88
<i>Scorpions</i> —————	97
<i>Sea Blue</i> —————	11
<i>Sea Eggs</i> —————	181
<i>Sea Horse</i> —————	152
<i>Shark Fish</i> —————	181
<i>Ibid.</i> —————	205
<i>Sheer-water Bird</i> —————	245
<i>Shelvoek's Letter, &amp;c.</i> —————	115
<i>Skie, in the West-Indies</i> —————	22
<i>Sloan's Account of Nevis</i> —————	218
<i>Soal-Fish</i> —————	306
<i>Solomon's Cisterns</i> —————	168
<i>Spices transplanted</i> —————	309
<i>Spiders</i> —————	204
<i>Spiders at Cuba</i> —————	235
<i>Sprats</i> —————	196
<i>Spring perpetual</i> —————	242
<i>Spring in the Sea, Hot</i> —————	58
<i>Spring at Louth</i> —————	178
<i>Stones in an Oxe's Paunch</i> —————	161
<i>Stones grow</i> —————	154
<i>Ibid.</i> —————	246
<i>Stones, with odd shapes, colours, &amp;c.</i> —————	160
<i>Stones by Petrification</i> —————	168
——— <i>Horse's Kidney petrified</i> —————	170

*Stones,*

# I N D E X.

	Page
<i>Stones, Artificial</i> _____	171
— <i>Tables of Artificial Stone</i> _____	173
<i>Storks</i> _____	140
<i>Sugar-Canes</i> _____	222
<i>Sword Fish</i> _____	198

## T.

<i>Tamarind Tree</i> _____	194
<i>Tarantulae in Italy</i> _____	102
— <i>at Cuba</i> _____	234
<i>Thrasher Fish</i> _____	198
<i>Tide at Nevis</i> _____	246
<i>Ibid.</i> _____	150
<i>Toad, hairy</i> _____	235
<i>Toad alive in Portland Stone</i> _____	156
<i>Tortoise, Sea</i> _____	197
<i>Tree, Gallow</i> _____	288
<i>Tropick Bird</i> _____	245
<i>Turkey Capons</i> _____	221
<i>Turnado</i> _____	189
<i>Ibid.</i> _____	202

## V.

<i>Vegetable, strange</i> _____	203
<i>Vincent St. a Mountain blown up</i> _____	60

## W.

<i>Water Spouts</i> _____	189
<i>Ibid.</i> _____	244
<i>Whale</i>	

# I N D E X.

	Page
<i>Whale</i> _____	109
<i>Whirlwind at Land</i> _____	189
<i>Wilk Fish</i> _____	2
<i>Wind always East at Nevis</i> _____	56
<i>Woodward's Natural History of the Earth</i> _____	246
<i>Worms in Negroes Legs</i> _____	98

F I N I S.

## ERRATA.

- Page 10. l. 21. *read* came up again  
p. 86. l. 12. *r.* Rocks or dry Ground  
p. 112. l. 13. *r.* a Minute's space  
p. 129. l. 14. *r.* an Account of Treatises  
p. 162. l. 17. *r.* and their Shells  
p. 225. i. last. *r.* the reason why  
p. 229. l. 17. *r.* As for Bad Men  
p. 241. l. 19. *r.* so that the Ships  
p. 246. l. 25. *r.* does not grow  
p. 305. l. 19. *r.* under that Government



